

It. coll. 52^m (6

<36639399530011

<36639399530011

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek

34. coll. 52 m (6)
HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF THE MOST CELEBRATED

VOYAGES,
TRAVELS, AND DISCOVERIES,

FROM THE
TIME OF COLUMBUS

TO THE
PRESENT PERIOD.

"Non apis inde tulit collectos sedula flores." Ovid

By WILLIAM MAVOR, LL.D.

VOL. VI.

224 B5 m. 5.
LONDON:

PRINTED FOR E. NEWBERRY,
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD.

1796.

W616711

+

LIST OF ACCOUNTS

OF THE MOST CELEBRATED

VOYAGES

IN THE EAST AND DISCOVERIES

FROM THE

TIME OF COLUMBUS

TO THE

PRESENT PERIOD

BY

WILLIAM MAJOR, LL.D.

OF

BY WILLIAM MAJOR, LL.D.

OF

VOL. VI.

**Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München**

1700.

CONTENTS OF VOL. VI.

F IRST Voyage of Captain James Cook, to the Southern Hemisphere ; undertaken chiefly with a view of observing the Transit of Ve- nus over the Sun's disk, - - -	Page I
Second Voyage of Captain James Cook, to explore the Southern Hemisphere, - - -	163

COLLEGE OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK

LIBRARY



THE CITY OF NEW YORK
LIBRARY
OF THE
COLLEGE OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK
NEW YORK

FIRST VOYAGE
OF
CAPTAIN JAMES COOK,
IN THE
SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE;

UNDERTAKEN CHIEFLY WITH A VIEW OF OB-
SERVING THE TRANSIT OF VENUS OVER
THE SUN'S DISK.

WHEN merit bursts through the clouds of original indigence, when genius and abilities gain the palm of reward, the biographer becomes animated with his subject, and feels the social sympathies expand within his breast.

Distinguished as this country is for its able navigators, it acquires no inconsiderable accession of fame from boasting the name of Cook, whose three principal voyages we are now about to detail in an unbroken series.

This able and amiable man was born at Marton, in Cleveland, a village about four miles from Great Ayton, in Yorkshire, on the 27th of October 1728. His father, who lived in the humble station of a farmer's servant, married a woman in the same sphere of life with himself; and both were noted in their neighbourhood for their honesty, sobriety,

fobriety, and industry, qualities which reflect a lustre on the lowest ranks.

When our navigator was about two years old, his father and family removed to Great Ayton, and was appointed to superintend a considerable farm belonging to the late Thomas Scottowe, esq. known by the name of Airyholm.

As the father long continued in this trust, the son, of course, followed the same servile employment, as far as his tender years would admit. His early education appears to have been very slender; but at the age of thirteen we find him put under the tuition of Mr. Pullen, who taught school at Ayton, where he learned the rudiments of arithmetic and book-keeping, and is said to have shewn a remarkable facility in acquiring the science of numbers.

About the beginning of 1745, when young Cook was seventeen years old, his father bound him apprentice to William Sanderfon, for four years, to learn the grocery and haberdashery business, at Snaith, a populous fishing town about ten miles from Whitby. But as he evinced a strong partiality for a maritime life, for which his predilection was probably strengthened by the situation of the place, and the company with which, it is probable, he associated, after a year and a half's servitude, on some trivial disagreement with his master, he obtained a release from his engagements, and determined to follow the bent of his inclination.

While he continued at Snaith, according to Mr. Sanderfon's account, he discovered a maturity of judgment, and a quickness in calculations beyond his years.

In July 1746 he was bound apprentice to Messrs. Walker of Whitby, for the term of three years, which he served to the full satisfaction of his masters. His first voyage was on board the ship *Freelove*, burden of about four hundred and fifty tons, chiefly employed in the coal trade from Newcastle to London.

In May 1748, his master ordered him home to assist in rigging and fitting for sea, a fine new ship, named the *Three Brothers*, of six hundred tons. This was designed to improve him in his profession, and to qualify him for a better birth, when his servitude should expire. After two coal voyages in this vessel, she was taken into the service of government, and sent as a transport to Middleburgh, to convey some troops to Dublin. These being landed at their destination, another corps was taken on board, and brought to Liverpool. From thence the ship proceeded for Deptford, where she was paid off in April 1749. The remaining part of the season Cook served on board her in the Norway trade.

Being honourably released from his engagements, he next entered on board a ship employed in the Baltic trade, and performed several voyages, of no great importance, during the two following years. In 1752, his old master promoted him to be mate of one of his ships, called the *Friendship*, in which capacity he acted for some time, with so much credit to himself and satisfaction to his owners, that it is said, he was offered the place of captain. This, however, he declined, and fortunate was it for his country he did so.

In the spring of 1755, hostilities commenced between Great Britain and France. As press-

warrants had been issued, Mr. Cook, who then lay in the river Thames, afraid of being pressed, resolved, if possible, to conceal himself; but afterwards reflecting on the difficulty of this, he adopted the resolution of entering as a volunteer in the royal navy, "having a mind," as he expressed himself, "to try his fortune in that way."

In pursuance of this design, he repaired to a house of rendezvous at Wapping, and entered on board the *Eagle*, a sixty gun ship, at that time commanded by Captain Hamer. To this ship, Captain, afterwards Sir Hugh, Palliser, being appointed in October following, Cook's diligence and attention to the duties of his profession did not escape the notice of that intelligent commander, and he met with every encouragement compatible with his humble station.

Cook's merit having been blazoned among his connections and friends in his native country, some of them generously interested themselves in his behalf, and procured a letter of recommendation to his captain from Mr. Osbaldeston, member of parliament for Scarborough, in which it was requested he would point out in what manner they could contribute to his promotion.

Captain Palliser did full justice to Cook's character, and suggested, that a master's warrant might, perhaps, be procured for him, by which he would be put in a situation suited to his talents, and be enabled to reflect credit on those who honoured him with their patronage.

In consequence of this, interest was made for a master's warrant, which he obtained to the *Grampus* sloop, in May 1759; but this appointment did not take place, as the former master unexpectedly returned. In a few days, however, he was made
master

master of the Garland ; but here too he was disappointed, for, on enquiry, it was found that the ship had already sailed. At last, he was appointed to the Mercury, which was destined for North America, under the command of Sir Charles Saunders, who, in conjunction with General Wolfe, was then engaged in the memorable siege of Quebec.

During that signal transaction, it was found necessary to obtain the soundings of the river St. Lawrence, directly opposite to the French camp at Montmorency and Beauport. As this was universally esteemed to be a dangerous and difficult service, and as Cook's sagacity and intrepidity were now well known, Captain Palliser recommended him for the undertaking ; and in the choice that was made the service was not injured. Cook executed his office in the completest manner, and to the entire satisfaction of his superiors. He did not, however, effect this without great risk. Being engaged in this pursuit for several successive nights, he was at last discovered by the enemy, who sent a number of canoes filled with Indians to surround him, and he had no other alternative but to make for the Isle of Orleans, where he was so closely pursued, that he had scarcely leaped from the bow of the boat, before the Indians entered by the stern, and carried her off in triumph.

There is little reason to believe, that before this period Cook had used a pencil, or was acquainted with the principles of drawing ; but such was the vigour of his mind, and his aptitude for the acquisition of knowledge, that he soon mastered every object to which he applied. And notwithstanding the disadvantages under which

he laboured, he furnished the admiral with as complete a draught of the channel and its soundings, as could have been furnished by the most expert surveyor in peace and by daylight.

Our navigator performed another service, not less important, and which redounds equally to his honour. The navigation of the river St. Lawrence is both difficult and dangerous, and was then particularly so to the English, who were strangers in that quarter. The admiral, therefore, who had conceived a very favourable opinion of Mr. Cook's abilities, appointed him to survey the river below Quebec, which he also executed with the same diligence and ability he had displayed on the former occasion.

This chart of the river, when completed, was published, with soundings and directions for safely navigating it; and so great was the accuracy observed, that it has superseded all other surveys.

After the conquest of Canada, so glorious to every person who had a share in it, Mr. Cook was appointed master of the Northumberland, under Lord Colvill, on the 2d of September 1759. In this ship his lordship continued the following winter as commodore, at Halifax; and Cook's conduct, in his new station, did not fail, as on former occasions, to gain him the friendship and esteem of his commander.

Sensible that he was now in the road to promotion, he shewed a laudable desire to qualify himself to adorn his profession, by devoting his leisure hours to the study of such branches of knowledge as reflect a lustre on naval life. At Halifax he first read Euclid's Elements, and studied astronomy. The books he was able to procure, were few indeed; but application and perseverance

feverance supplied many deficiencies, and enabled him to make a progress, which a man of less genius could not attain under much superior advantages.

He received a lieutenant's commission on the 1st of April 1760, and daily advanced in the career of glory. In September 1762, he assisted at the recapture of Newfoundland, after which the English fleet remained some time at Placentia, in order to put that place into a better state of defence. During this period, Mr. Cook had another opportunity of displaying his diligence, and manifesting his zeal in the service of his country: he surveyed the harbour and heights of that place, and, by this means, attracted the notice of Captain, afterwards Admiral, Graves, who was at that time governor of Newfoundland. Captain Graves having entered into conversation with him, found him possessed of such intelligence and judgment, that he conceived a very favourable opinion of his abilities in general, and his nautical skill in particular; and in cultivating a longer acquaintance with him, was still more and more prepossessed in his favour.

Endowed with a vigorous and active mind, and stimulated, perhaps, by the success that had attended his past labours, and the hopes of future promotion, Cook continued to display the most unremitting assiduity to make himself acquainted with the North American coast, and to facilitate its navigation; while the esteem which Captain Graves had justly conceived for him, was heightened by the concurrent testimonies of approbation, which all the officers, under whom he had served, so freely paid him.

Towards

Towards the close of 1762, Lieutenant Cook returned to England, and on the 21st of December he married at Barking in Essex, a young lady of the name of Batts, whom he tenderly loved, and who had every claim to his warmest affection and esteem. It is said, that Cook had been godfather to this lady, and that he declared at that time his wish for their future union. If this anecdote is true, it is a singular instance of the firmness of his character, and the strength of his attachment. His situation in life, however, and the high and important services to which he was called, did not suffer him to enjoy, without interruption, that matrimonial felicity which both parties seem to have been so well qualified to taste.

On the conclusion of the war in 1763, Captain Graves was again sent out as governor of Newfoundland; and as that island was considered of great commercial importance, and had been a principal object of contention between Great Britain and France, the governor obtained, at his pressing solicitation, an establishment for the survey of its coasts; and Lieutenant Cook was appointed to carry this plan into execution. He, therefore, went out with his friend the governor; and having surveyed the small islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, which, by treaty, had been ceded to France; after the business was finished he returned to England, at the close of the season.

In the beginning of the following year, he accompanied his former patron, Sir Hugh Palliser, who had been appointed governor of Labradore and Newfoundland, and prosecuted his surveys of the coasts as before.

For his employment, Cook was, by the unanimous voice of the best judges, deemed extremely well qualified; and the charts which he afterwards published, reflect the highest credit on his abilities. He also explored the interior of Newfoundland, in a much more accurate manner than had ever been done before; and by penetrating into the heart of the country, discovered several large lakes, the position of which he exactly ascertained. In this service he appears to have been occasionally engaged till 1767. However, we find him with Sir William Burnaby, on the Jamaica station in 1765; and that officer having occasion to send dispatches to the governor of Yucatan, relative to the log cutters in the Bay of Honduras, Lieutenant Cook was selected for that mission, and he performed it in a manner that entitled him to the approbation of the admiral. A relation of this voyage and journey was published in 1769, under the title of "Remarks on a Passage from the River Balise, in the Bay of Honduras, to Merida, the capital of the Province of Yucatan, in the Spanish West Indies, by Lieutenant Cook."

That our navigator had, by this time, made a considerable proficiency in practical astronomy, is evident from a short paper, drawn up by him, which was inserted in the seventh volume of the Philosophical Transactions, entitled, "An Observation of an Eclipse of the Sun at the Island of Newfoundland, August 5, 1766, with the Longitude of the Place of Observation deduced from it." This observation was made at one of the Burgeo islands, near Cape Ray, in latitude 47 deg. 36 min. 19 sec. on the southwest extremity of Newfoundland; and Cook's paper having been communicated

municated to Mr. Witchell, he compared it with an observation made on the same eclipse by Professor Hornsby, and thence computed the difference of longitude of the places of observation, making proper allowance for parallax, and the prolate spheroidal figure of the earth. That Cook was now counted an able mathematician, the admission of this paper into the Philosophical Transactions, and the notice that was taken of it, will sufficiently verify.

For the present reign it was reserved to carry the spirit of enterprise to its fullest extent, and to direct it to the accomplishment of the noblest purposes. As soon as the return of peace gave an opportunity for promoting the interests of science, by enlarging the bounds of discovery, two voyages were projected by his present majesty, which were performed, as has been seen in our preceding volume, by Captains Byron, Wallis, and Carteret; and before the two latter gentlemen returned, a third was resolved on, the principal object of which was the improvement of astronomy.

It having been long before calculated, that the planet Venus would pass over the Sun's disk in 1769, it was judged that the most proper place for observing this phenomenon, would be either at the Marquesas, or at one of those islands to which Tasman had given the several appellations of Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and Middleburgh; but which are now better known under the general name of the Friendly Isles. This being a matter of much importance in the science of astronomy, the Royal Society, with a laudable zeal for its advancement, presented a memorial to his majesty, requesting, among other things, that a vessel

vessel might be fitted out at the expence of government, to convey proper persons to observe this transit at one of the places already mentioned.

The petition being readily complied with, and orders having been given by the lords commissioners of the admiralty to provide a vessel for that purpose, on the 3d of April, Mr. Stephens, the secretary to the board, informed the society that every thing was expediting according to their wishes.

Mr. Dalrymple was originally fixed on to superintend this expedition: a man eminent in science, a member of the Royal Society, and who had already distinguished himself respecting the geography of the Southern Ocean. As this gentleman had been regularly bred to the sea, he insisted on having a brevet commission, as captain of the vessel, before he would undertake the employ. Sir Edward Hawke, who then presided at the admiralty board, violently opposed this measure; and being pressed on the subject, declared, that nothing could induce him to give the sanction of his name to such a commission.

Both parties were inflexible; and it was, therefore, thought expedient to look out some other person to conduct the expedition. Accordingly, Mr. Stephens having recommended Lieutenant Cook, and this recommendation being strengthened by the testimony of Sir Hugh Palliser, who was well acquainted with Cook's merit, and abilities for the discharge of this office, he was appointed to this distinguished post by the lords commissioners, and promoted to the rank of lieutenant of the royal navy on the 25th of May 1768.

This appointment having taken place, Sir Hugh Palliser was commissioned to provide a vessel adapted

adapted for such a voyage. After examining a great number of ships, then lying in the Thames, in conjunction with Cook, of whose judgment he entertained the highest opinion, they at last fixed on the Endeavour, a vessel of three hundred and seventy tons, which had been built for the coal trade.

In the interim, Captain Wallis having returned from his voyage round the world, and having signified to the Royal Society, that Port Royal Harbour in King George's Island, now called Otaheite, would be the most convenient place for observing the transit, his opinion was adopted, and the observers were ordered to repair thither.

Mr. Charles Green, the coadjutor of Dr. Bradley, the astronomer royal, was nominated to assist Captain Cook in conducting the astronomical part of the undertaking; and he was accompanied also by Joseph Banks, esq. the present president of the Royal Society, whose baronetage, to which he has been since raised, reflects honour on his sovereign and the order. This friend of science, at an early period of life, possessed of an opulent fortune, and zealous to apply it to the best ends, embarked on this tedious and hazardous enterprise, animated by the wish alone of improving himself, and enlarging the bounds of knowledge. He took two draughtsmen with him, and had likewise a secretary and four servants in his retinue.

Dr. Solander, an ingenious and learned Swede, who had been appointed to a place in the British Museum, and was an adept in natural philosophy, likewise joined the expedition. Possessed of the enthusiasm with which Linnæus inspired his disciples, he braved danger in the prosecution of his favourite

favourite studies, and being a man of erudition and capacity, he added no small eclat to the voyage in which he embarked.

Though the principal intention of this expedition was to observe the transit of Venus, it was thought proper to make it comprehend other objects also. Captain Cook was, therefore, directed, after he had accomplished his main business, to proceed in making farther discoveries in the South Seas, which now began to be explored with uncommon resolution.

The complement of the Endeavour consisted of eighty-four persons. She was victualled for eighteen months, and ten carriage and twelve swivel guns, with abundance of ammunition, and all manner of stores were taken on board.

Being completely fitted for sea, Captain Cook sailed from Deptford on the 30th of July 1768, and on the 13th of August anchored in Plymouth Sound, from which, after a few days stay, they proceeded to sea.

The first land they made, after their leaving the Channel, was on the 2d of September, when Cape Finisterre and Cape Ortugal, in Spain, both came in view. They arrived on the 13th at Madeira, and anchored in Fonchial Road. Here unfortunately they lost Mr. Weir, the master's mate, who, in heaving the anchor, fell overboard and was drowned.

This island has a beautiful appearance from the sea, those parts of hills which present themselves being covered with vines.

The only article of trade is wine, which is made by pressing the juice out in a square wooden vessel. The persons employed, having taken off their stockings and jackets, get into it, and with

their elbows and feet press out as much of the juice as they can. In like manner the stalks, being tied together, are pressed under a square piece of wood by a lever, with a stone fastened to the end of it.

There are no wheel carriages of any sort, nor have the people any thing that resembles them, except a hollow board, or sledge, upon which those wine vessels are drawn, that are too big to be carried by hand.

Nature has been very liberal in her gifts to Madeira. The inhabitants are not without ingenuity, but they want industry. The soil is so very rich, and there is such a variety in the climate, that there is scarcely any article, either of the necessities or luxuries of life, which cannot be cultivated in the island. Pine apples and mangoes grow almost spontaneously in the town, and great variety of fruit upon the hills. Corn is also very large and plenty. The beef, mutton, and pork, are remarkably good.

Foncho, which is fennel in Portuguese, gave name to the town of Fonchial. It is seated at the bottom of a bay; indifferently built, the streets narrow, and very wretchedly paved. In the churches there are great numbers of ornaments, with pictures and images of saints, for the most part indifferently executed. A better taste prevails in some of the convents, particularly that of the Franciscans, where simplicity and neatness unite. The infirmary does honour to the architect, and is the most capital edifice in the whole place.

There are many very high hills; Pico Ruivo is near five thousand one hundred feet in height, perpendicularly from its base. The inhabitants
are

are computed to be between seventy and eighty thousand; and the revenue arising from the customs, is supposed to amount to twenty or thirty-thousand pounds sterling per annum.

They sailed from Madeira September 19th. On the 23d they saw the Peak of Teneriffe. This mountain is near fifteen thousand four hundred feet high. On the 29th they saw Bona Vista, one of the Cape de Verd Islands. From Teneriffe to Bona Vista they observed flying fish in considerable numbers, which appeared very beautiful, their sides resembling burnished silver. Mr. Banks, on the 7th of October, caught what is called a Portuguese man of war, together with several marine animals of the Molusca tribe.

On the 25th of October, they crossed the line with the usual forms. On the 29th, in the evening, they saw the luminous appearance of the sea mentioned by navigators, it emitted rays of light resembling those of lightning. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander threw out a casting-net, when a species of the Medusa was caught, resembling a metallic substance greatly heated, emitting a whitish light. Some crabs were also caught at the same time, which were exceeding small, yet gave a very glittering appearance. These animals have not yet been described by naturalists.

Provisions now falling short, it was determined to put into Rio de Janeiro; where they arrived on the 13th.

Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, was sent before in the pinnace to the city, to inform the governor, that they put in there for refreshments and a pilot. The pinnace returned without the lieutenant, who was detained till the captain came on shore. Soon after a ten-oared boat, filled with

foldiers, came up, and rowed round the ship, without any conversation taking place. A second boat came up, with several of the viceroy's officers; they enquired whence the Endeavour came; what she had on board; her number of men, guns, and destination. These, and many other questions, were answered without equivocation; when they apologized for detaining the lieutenant, and other steps they had taken, which they justified on the plea of custom.

Captain Cook went on shore on the 14th, and obtained leave to purchase what he wanted, on condition of employing an inhabitant as a factor. The captain judging that the viceroy imagined they were come to trade, endeavoured to convince him of his mistake, by acquainting him, that they were bound to the southward, to observe the transit of Venus; a very interesting object to the advancement of navigation, of which phenomenon he appeared to be totally ignorant.

The viceroy having ordered, that only the captain, and such sailors as were necessary to be upon duty, should be suffered to land; they, notwithstanding, attempted to come on shore, but were prevented by the guard-boat. Several of the crew, however, unknown to the sentinel, stole out of the cabin window at midnight, letting themselves down by a rope into the boat; and rowing to some unfrequented part of the shore, made excursions up the country, though not so far as they wished. When the captain complained of these restrictions, the only answer he obtained was, that he acted in conformity to his master's orders. It was now agreed to present two memorials to the viceroy; one was written by the captain, the other by Mr. Banks: their answers were
no

no way satisfactory. The captain, judging it necessary, in vindication of his compliance, to urge the viceroy to an act of force in the execution of his orders, sent Lieutenant Hicks, with a packet, with directions not to allow a guard in his boat. The officer of the guard-boat did not oppose him by force, but accompanying the lieutenant on shore, went to the viceroy, and acquainted him with what had passed, which induced his excellency to refuse opening the packet, commanding the lieutenant to return. He found a soldier had been put on board the boat in his absence, as a guard, and insisted upon his quitting it. The officer now seized the boat's crew, and conducted them to prison, under a guard; and the lieutenant was sent back to the ship, guarded likewise. When Mr. Hicks had acquainted the captain with these transactions, the latter wrote to the viceroy, demanding his boat and men, and inclosed that very memorial, which he refused to receive from the lieutenant.

This express was sent by a petty officer, and the viceroy promised to return an answer. In the interim, in a sudden gust of wind, the long-boat, with four pipes of rum, went adrift, with a small skiff of Mr. Banks's that was fastened to her. The misfortune was still greater, as the pinnace was on shore. The yawl was manned immediately, but did not return till next morning, when she brought all the people on board. From them Captain Cook learnt, that the long boat having filled with water, they had brought her to a grappling, and quitted her; and falling in with a reef of rocks, on their return, they were compelled to cut adrift the little boat belonging to Mr. Banks. In this situation the captain dis-

patched another letter to the viceroy, acquainting him with the accident; at the same time desiring he would assist them with a boat to recover their own: this was accompanied with a fresh demand of the pinnace and her crew. His excellency at length complied with both the request and demand; and the same day they fortunately recovered the long boat and skiff.

Mr. Banks, on the 26th, artfully eluded the vigilance of the guard, and went on shore. He avoided the town, and passed the day in the fields, where the chief objects of his curiosity lay.

Being prepared for sea, with water and provisions, they took on board a pilot the 1st of December, but the wind being contrary, they were prevented getting out.

On the 7th, having passed the fort, the pilot was discharged, and the guard-boat quitted them at the same time.

The town of Janeiro is situated on the west side of the river, from which it extends about three quarters of a mile. The ground on which it stands is pretty level. Some of its streets run parallel from north to south, and are intersected by others at right angles. The principal street is near a hundred feet in width; the other streets are commonly twenty or thirty feet wide. The houses adjoining to the principal street have three stories, but in other places they are very irregular, though built after the same manner as in Lisbon.

The viceroy's palace forms the right angle of a large square; the palace, mint, stables, gaol, &c. composing but one large building, which has two stories, and is ninety feet from the water. In the centre of the square is a fountain supplied with water from a spring at the distance of three miles, conveyed

conveyed by an aqueduct. From this fountain both the shipping and inhabitants are supplied with water. At every corner of the streets is an altar. Negroes are almost the only people employed in selling the different commodities exposed in the market, and they fill up their leisure time in spinning of cotton.

The gentry here keep their carriages, which are drawn by mules; the ladies, however, use a sedan chair, boarded before and behind, with curtains on each side, which is carried by two negroes.

The apothecaries' shops serve the purposes of a coffee house, people meeting in them to drink capillaire, and play at back-gammon. Beggars, who infest the streets of most European cities, are not to be found in this.

With regard to the women, it is on all hands agreed, that the females of the Portuguese and Spanish settlements, in South America, are much addicted to gallantry. According to Dr. Solander's, account, as soon as the evening began, females appeared on all sides in every window, and particularized their favourites, by giving them nosegays.

The climate of Rio de Janeiro is both agreeable and healthy, being free from many inconveniences that are incident to other tropical countries. The air is but seldom immoderately hot, as the sea breeze constantly begins to blow about ten o'clock in the morning, and continues until night, when it is generally succeeded by a land wind.

The soil produces all the tropical fruits, such as oranges, lemons, limes, melons, mangoes, and cocoa-nuts, in great abundance.

The mines are rich, and lie a considerable way up the country. They are kept so private, that any person found upon the road which leads to them, is hung upon the next tree, unless he can give a satisfactory account of the cause of his being in that situation. Near forty-thousand negroes are annually imported to dig in these mines, which are so pernicious to the human frame, and occasion so great a mortality amongst the poor wretches employed in them, that in the year 1766 twenty thousand more were drafted from the town of Rio, to supply the deficiency of the former number. Who can read this without emotion!

The current coin is Portuguese, which is struck here; the silver pieces are called Petacks, of different value; and the copper are five and ten ree pieces.

The harbour is safe and commodious, and may be distinguished by a remarkable hill, in the shape of a cone, at the west point of the bay.

Thursday, December 8th, 1768, having procured all necessary supplies, they left Rio de Janeiro. They did not meet with any material occurrence from this time to the 22d, when they were surrounded by great numbers of porpoises, of a singular species, which were about fifteen feet in length, and of an ash colour.

On the 23d, they observed an eclipse of the moon; and about seven o'clock in the morning, a small white cloud appeared in the west, from which a train of fire issued, extending itself westerly; about two minutes after, they heard two distinct loud explosions, immediately succeeding each other like cannon; after which the cloud soon disappeared.

January

January 4th, 1769, they saw an appearance of land, which they mistook for Pepys' Island; but on their standing towards it, it proved what the sailors call a fog bank. On the 14th they entered the Strait of La Maire; but the tide being against them, they were driven out with great violence, and the waves ran so high, that the ship's bowsprit was frequently under water; at length, however, they got anchorage, at the entrance of a little cove, which Captain Cook called St. Vincent's Bay.

The weeds, which here grow upon rocky ground, are very remarkable; they appear above the surface in eight and nine fathoms water; the leaves are four feet in length, and many of the stalks, though not more than an inch and a half in circumference, above one hundred. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander having been on shore some hours, returned with more than a hundred different plants and flowers, hitherto unnoticed by the European botanists.

Sunday 15th, having anchored in twelve fathoms water, upon coral rocks, before a small cove, distant from shore about a mile, two of the natives came down upon the beach, in expectation that they would land; but this situation affording little shelter, the captain got under sail again, and the natives retired.

About two o'clock they anchored in the Bay of Good Success, and the captain went on shore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, to search for a watering place, and confer with the Indians. These gentlemen proceeded about a hundred yards before the captain, when two of the Indians, having advanced forward and seated themselves, they rose, upon Mr. Banks and the doctor's

doctor's coming up, and each of them threw away a small stick, which they had before in their hands; this they did in such a direction, that the stick flew both from themselves and the strangers, which they meant as a token of peace. They then returned briskly towards their companions, who had remained at some distance behind, and made signs to the strangers to advance, which they accordingly complied with. The reception the gentlemen met with was friendly, though the manner was uncouth. The civility was returned, by the distribution of beads and ribbons, with which the Indians were much pleased. After a mutual confidence had been thus established, the rest of the English party joined, and a general conversation, though of a singular kind, ensued. Three of the Indians now returned with the captain and his friends to the ship, whom they clothed and entertained. They refused to drink rum or brandy, after tasting them; intimating by signs that it burnt their throats. They were of a middle stature, with broad flat faces, low foreheads, high cheeks, noses inclining to flatness, wide nostrils, small black eyes, large mouths, small, but indifferent, teeth, and black straight hair, falling down over their ears and forehead, which was commonly smeared with brown and red paint; and, like all the original natives of America, they were beardless. Their garments were the skins of guanicos and seals, which they wrapped round their shoulders. The women have a small string tied round each ankle, and wear each a flap of skin round the middle.

Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Buchan, and several other gentlemen, accompanied by servants, went a considerable way into the country, where
they

they had marshy ground, and very cold blasts of wind and snow, to contend with; however, after great fatigue, they at last attained a considerable eminence they had in view. Here they found a great variety of plants, that gratified their curiosity, and repaid them for their toil.

It was now near eight o'clock in the evening, and Dr. Solander, who knew from experience that extreme cold, when joined with fatigue, occasions a drowsiness that is not easily resisted, entreated his friends to keep in motion, however disagreeable it might be to them; his words were, "Whoever sits down, will sleep; and whoever sleeps, will wake no more." Every one seemed accordingly, armed with resolution; but on a sudden, the cold became so very intense, as to threaten the most direful effects. It was very remarkable, that Dr. Solander himself, who had so forcibly admonished and alarmed his party, should be the first who insisted upon being suffered to repose. In spite of the most earnest entreaties of his friends, he lay down amidst the snow, and it was with great difficulty they kept him awake. One of the black servants became also weary and faint, and was upon the point of following the doctor's example. Mr. Buchan was therefore detached with a party to make a fire at the first commodious spot they could meet with. Mr. Banks, with four more, remained with the doctor and Richmond the black, who, with the utmost difficulty, were induced to come on; but after walking a few miles farther, they expressed their inability of proceeding. When the black was informed, that if he remained there he would soon be frozen to death, he replied, that he was so exhausted with fatigue, that death would be a relief

1

relief to him. Doctor Solander said he was not unwilling to go, but that he must first take some sleep, notwithstanding what he had before declared to the company.

Thus resolved, they both sat down, supported by bushes, and in a short time fell fast asleep. Intelligence now came from the advanced party, that a fire was kindled about a quarter of a mile farther on the way. Mr. Banks then waked the doctor, who had almost lost the use of his limbs already, though it was but a few minutes since he sat down; he nevertheless consented to go on. Every measure taken to relieve the black proved ineffectual; he remained motionless, and they were obliged to leave him to the care of the other black servant and a sailor, who appeared to have been the least hurt by the cold; and they were to be relieved, as soon as two others were sufficiently warmed to supply their places. The doctor was with much difficulty got to the fire. Those who were sent to relieve the companions of Richmond, returned in about half an hour without being able to find them. There was a fall of snow which incessantly continued for near two hours, and there remained no hopes of seeing the three absentees again, at least, alive. About twelve o'clock, however, a great shouting was heard at a distance, which gave inexpressible satisfaction to every one present. Mr. Banks and four others went forth and met the sailor, with just strength enough to walk; he was immediately sent to the fire, and they proceeded to seek for the two others. They found Richmond upon his legs, but incapable of moving them; the other black was lying senseless upon the ground. All endeavours to bring them to the fire were fruitless, nor was it

it possible to kindle one upon the spot, on account of the snow that had fallen, and was still falling, so that there was no alternative, and they were compelled to leave the two unfortunate negroes to their fate; making them, however, a bed of boughs of trees, and covering them very thick with the same.

As all hands had been employed in endeavouring to move the two blacks to the fire, and had therefore been exposed to the cold for near an hour and a half, some of them began to be afflicted in the same manner as those they went to relieve. At length, however, they reached the fire, where they passed the night in a very disagreeable manner. The party that set out from the ship consisted of twelve, of whom two were already judged to be dead: it was doubtful whether a third would be able to return on board; and Mr. Buchan, a fourth, who had just recovered from fits, seemed threatened with them again. They had wandered so far into the internal parts, that the ship was a long day's journey distant; and they had not provisions left sufficient to afford the company a single meal.

On the 17th in the morning, at day-break, nothing presented itself to view all around but snow, the trees being equally covered with it as the ground; and the blasts of the wind were so violent and frequent, that their journey was rendered impracticable, and there was much reason to dread perishing with cold and famine. However, at about six in the morning they were flattered with a dawn of hope of being delivered, by discovering the sun through the clouds, which gradually diminished. Previous to their setting out, messengers were dispatched to the unhappy

negroes, who returned with the melancholy news of their death.

About ten o'clock in the morning, they set out on their journey to the ship, and in about three hours, to their great astonishment and satisfaction, they found themselves upon the shore, much nearer to the ship than their most sanguine expectations could have flattered them. The congratulations every one on board expressed at their return, can better be imagined than described.

On the 20th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander made another excursion into the country. After walking for some time, they arrived at a small town, consisting of about a dozen miserable huts, constructed without art or regularity, in the form of a sugar loaf, with a place left open, which answered the double purpose of a door and chimney. Mr. Banks observed some European articles amongst them, from whence it was judged, that they travelled at times to the north; as no ship had touched at this part of Terra del Fuego for some years.

These people appeared upon the whole to be the out-casts of human nature; their only food was shell fish; and they were destitute of every convenience arising from the rudest art. Nevertheless they seemed content; so little does refinement or luxury promote happiness!

The generality of writers, who have described the island of Terra del Fuego, have represented it as covered with snow, and destitute of wood. In this, however, they are evidently mistaken, and their error must have arisen from having visited it in the winter season, when it possibly is covered with snow. The crew of the Endeavour
perceived

perceived trees when they were at a considerable distance from the island, and on their nearer approach, they found the sea coast and the sides of the hills clothed with an agreeable verdure. The summit of the hills are barren, but the valleys are rich, and a brook is to be found at the foot of almost every hill; the water has a reddish tinge, but is not ill tasted, and was some of the best the captain took in, during his whole voyage.

Thursday, January 26th, Captain Cook weighed anchor, and the weather being very calm, Mr. Banks sailed in a small boat to shoot birds, when he killed some sheerwaters and albatrosses; the latter proved very good eating.

Notwithstanding the doubling of Cape Horn is represented as a very dangerous course, and that it is generally thought passing through the Strait of Magellan is less perilous, the Endeavour doubled it with as little danger as the North Foreland on the Kentish coast; the heavens were fair, the wind temperate, the weather pleasant; and, being near shore, they had a very distinct view of the coast.

About ten o'clock, Tuesday, April 4th, Peter Briscoe, servant to Mr. Banks, discovered land to the south, about three or four leagues distant. The captain immediately hauled up for it, and found it to be an island of an oval form, with a lake or lagoon in the centre, that extended over the greatest part of it. The border of land which surrounded the lake was in many places low and narrow, especially towards the south, where the beach consisted of a reef of rocks; three places on the north side had the same appearance. Captain Cook came within a mile on the north side, but though he cast a line of one hundred and

thirty fathoms, he found no bottom, and could not meet with any anchorage.

There were several natives visible on shore; they seemed tall, with remarkable large heads, which might probably be increased by some bandage; their hair was black, and their complexions copper colour. There appeared along the beach, abreast of the ship, some of these inhabitants, with pikes or poles in their hands, which seemed twice the height of themselves.

Captain Cook saw land again in the afternoon to the north-west. He reached it by sun-set, when it appeared a low island covered with wood, in form circular, about a mile in circumference. No inhabitants were visible, nor any cocoa-nut trees, though the Endeavour had reached the shore within half a mile; yet the island appeared covered with verdure of various tinges. This island the gentlemen on board named Thrumb Cap.

On the 10th, upon their looking out for the island to which they were destined, they saw land ahead. The next morning it appeared very high and mountainous, and it was known to be King George the Third's Island, so named by Captain Wallis, but by the natives called Otaheite. The calms prevented the Endeavour from approaching it till the morning of the 12th, when a breeze springing up, several canoes were making towards the ship. Each canoe had in it young plantains, and branches of trees, as tokens of peace and friendship; and they were handed up the sides of the ship by the people in one of the canoes, who made signals in a very expressive manner, intimating, that they desired these emblems of pacification should be placed in a conspicuous

spicuous part of the ship; and they were accordingly stuck amongst the rigging, at which they testified their approbation. Their cargoes consisted of cocoa-nuts, bananas, bread-fruit, apples, and figs, which were very acceptable to the crew, and were readily purchased.

They lay off and on all night, and in the morning of the 13th they entered Port Royal Harbour, in the Island of Otaheite, and anchored within half a mile of the shore. A great number of the natives immediately came off in their canoes, and bartered their commodities for beads and other trinkets.

An elderly man, named Owhaw, who was known to Mr. Gore and others, who had visited this island with Captain Wallis, came on board; and as he was considered an useful man, the captain endeavoured to gratify all his enquiries. Captain Cook now drew up several necessary rules for the regulation of traffic with the inhabitants, and ordered that they should be punctually observed.

When the ship was properly secured, the captain went on shore with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, a party under arms, and their friend the old Indian. They were received on shore by some hundreds of the natives, who were struck with such awe, that the first who approached crept almost upon his hands and knees. He also presented to them branches of trees, the usual symbol of peace. This symbol was received, on the part of the English gentlemen, with demonstrations of satisfaction and friendship.

They were conducted by the old Indian, accompanied by his countrymen, towards the place where the Dolphin had watered. Here, the

ground being cleared, the chiefs of the natives threw down their boughs, and the captain and his companions followed the example, after having drawn up the marines, who, marching in order, dropped their branches upon those of the Indians. When they came to the watering place, the Indians intimated that they had their permission to occupy that ground, but it was not suited to their purpose. In the course of this walk, and a circuit through the woods, the Indians had got rid of their timidity, and became familiarized.

The whole circuit was near four miles, through groves, consisting of trees of cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit; beneath which trees were the habitations of the natives, consisting of only a roof, destitute of walls. The bread-fruit is about the size of the horse-chestnut; and the fruit is not unlike the cantaloupe melon in appearance. It is somewhat of the consistency of new bread, and is roasted before it is eaten.

Next morning, before they left the ship, several canoes came about her, filled with people, whose dress denoted them of the superior class: two of these came on board, and each of them fixed upon a friend; one of them chose Mr. Banks, and the other Captain Cook. The ceremony consisted of taking off their clothes in great part, and putting them upon their adopted friends. This compliment was returned, by presenting them some trinkets. They then made signs for these gentlemen to go with them to the place of their abode; and the captain being desirous of meeting with a more convenient harbour, and knowing more of the people, readily assented.

Accord.

Accordingly the captain, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, with the Indians and other friends, got into two boats. About three miles distance they landed, among several hundreds of the natives, who conducted them to a large house. Upon their entrance they saw a middle aged man, named Tootahah, who, as soon as they were seated, ordered a cock and hen to be produced, which he presented to Mr. Banks and the captain, as well as a piece of perfumed cloth; which compliment was returned by a present from Mr. Banks. They were then conducted with great civility to several large houses, constructed in the same manner as those already described; the ladies, so far from shunning, invited, and even pressed them to be seated. Whilst they were afterwards walking along the shore, they met, accompanied by a great number of natives, another chief, named Tubora Tumaida, with whom they settled a treaty of peace, in the manner before described. Tubora Tumaida intimated, he had provisions for them, if they chose to eat, and they accordingly dined heartily upon bread-fruit, plantains, and fish.

In the course of this visit, Dr. Solander having discovered that he had lost an opera glass, he complained to the chief, and interrupted the convivial party. This complaint was enforced by Mr. Banks's starting up and striking the butt end of his musket on the ground, which alarmed the Indians so much that they all precipitately ran out of the house, except the chief, and a few others of the superior class.

The chief appeared much concerned at this accident, and gave them to understand, with an appearance of great probity, that he would endeavour

deavour if possible to have the glass recovered; but that if this could not be done, he would make the doctor compensation, by giving him as much new cloth, as should be thought equal to its value. The case, however, was in a little time brought, and the glass itself soon after. After this adventure was amicably terminated, they returned to the ship about six o'clock in the evening.

Saturday the 15th, the captain, attended by Mr. Banks and some of the other gentlemen, went ashore to fix on a proper spot to erect a small fort for their defence during their stay on the island; and the ground was accordingly marked out for that purpose, a great number of the natives looking on all the while, and behaving in the most peaceable and friendly manner.

Mr. Banks having gone a shooting in the woods, some marines and a petty officer were appointed to guard the tent in the interim; while several of the natives accompanied the gentlemen in this excursion. Before this party had gone far they were alarmed by the discharge of two pieces, fired by the tent-guard. Upon their return to the tent, it appeared, that an Indian had taken an opportunity to snatch away one of the sentinel's muskets; whereupon a young midshipman, under whose command the party was, very imprudently ordered the marines to fire, which they did immediately amongst the thickest of the fugitive Indians, several of whom were wounded; but as the criminal did not fall, they pursued and shot him dead.

When Mr. Banks heard of the affair, he was greatly displeased with the guard, and he used his utmost endeavours to accommodate the difference;

ence; and through the mediation of an old man, prevailed on many of the natives to come over to them, bringing plantain-trees, their usual signal of peace, and clapping their hands in their breasts, they cried Tyau, which signifies friendship.

Few of the natives, however, appeared next morning upon the beach; and not one of them came on board. From hence Mr. Banks and the other gentlemen concluded, that their apprehensions were not entirely removed, more especially as even Owhaw had forsaken them. The captain, in consequence of these disagreeable appearances, brought the ship nearer to shore, and moored her so as to make her broad-side bear on the spot which had been marked for erecting the fort. In the evening he landed with some of the gentlemen, when the Indians assembled round them, and they trafficked together as before.

The fort began to be erected on the 18th. Some of the company were employed in throwing up intrenchments, whilst others were occupied in cutting fascines and pickets, which the Indians of their own accord cheerfully assisted in bringing from the woods. This day the natives brought down such quantities of bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, that it was necessary to reject them, and to intimate to them, that the company would not want any for two days. Beads were trafficked this day for every thing.

Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, in his evening walk, saw the body of the man who had been shot at the tent. It was deposited in a shed, close to the house where he had resided when alive. The corpse was placed on a bier, the frame of which was wood, with a matted bottom, supported by posts about five feet high. The corpse

was

was covered with a mat, and over that a white cloth; by its side lay a wooden mace, and towards the head two cocoa-nut shells; towards the feet was a bunch of green leaves and small dried boughs, tied together and stuck in the ground, near which was a stone the size of a cocoa-nut: here was also placed a young plantain tree and a stone axe. The natives seemed displeased at his approaching the body.

They had a specimen of the music of the country on the 22d; some of the natives performing on flutes, which had only two stops; the performer blew with his nostril instead of his mouth: several others sung, but only one tune, to this instrument.

On the 25th, several knives belonging to the officers were missing; upon which Mr. Banks, who had lost his among the rest, accused one of the chiefs with having stolen it, which caused him to be very unhappy, as he happened to be innocent of the fact, Mr. Banks's servant having mislaid it; and the rest were produced in a rag by a native. This chief was some time before he would forget this accusation, the tears starting from his eyes, and he made signs with the knife, that if he had ever been guilty of such an action, as was imputed to him, he would suffer his throat to be cut. However, in general, these people, from the highest to the lowest, are too much addicted to pilfering.

On the 26th six swivel guns were mounted upon the fort, which put the natives into great consternation; and caused several fishermen, who lived upon the point, to remove farther off, imagining they were to be fired at in a few days.

The next day Tubora Tumaida, with a friend and three of his women, dined at the fort. Soon after his departure he returned in much agitation, to acquaint Mr. Banks, that the ship's butcher had threatened to cut his wife's throat, upon her refusing to sell him a stone hatchet, which he had taken a fancy to, for a nail. It clearly appeared he had been culpable, and he was flogged on board, in sight of several Indians. As soon as the first stroke was given they interfered, and earnestly entreated that he might be untied. This being refused, they burst into tears, and shewed great concern.

During the forenoon of this day, canoes were continually coming in, and the tents at the fort were filled with people of both sexes. Mr. Molineux, master of the Endeavour, went on shore, and seeing a woman, whose name was Oberea, he declared she was the person he judged to be the queen of the island, when he came there on board the Dolphin in the last voyage.

The eyes of every one were now fixed on her, who had made so distinguished a figure in the accounts that had been given by the first discoverers of this island. The person of the Queen Oberea was of a large make, and tall; she was about forty years of age, her skin white; her eyes had great expression; she had been handsome, but her beauty was now upon the decline. She was soon conducted to the ship, and went on board, accompanied with some of her family. Many presents were made her, particularly a child's doll, which seemed the most to engross her attention. Captain Cook accompanied her on shore; and as soon as they landed, she presented him with a hog, and some plantains, which were carried to
the

the fort in proceſſion, Oberea and the captain bringing up the rear. They met Tootahah, who, though not king, ſeemed to be at this time inveſted with ſovereign authority, He immediately became jealous of the queen's having the doll; which made them find it neceſſary to compliment him with one alſo.

On Saturday 29th, in the forenoon, Mr. Banks paid a viſit to Oberea, who was ſtill aſleep under the awning of her canoe. Upon entering her chamber, to his great ſurpriſe, he found her in bed with a handſome young fellow, about five-and-twenty; upon which he immediately retired with ſome precipitation, not a little diſconcerted at this diſcovery; but he was ſoon given to underſtand, that ſuch amours were by no means conſidered ſcandalous. The queen ſoon dreſſed herſelf, and waited upon Mr. Banks without emotion.

The next day, Sunday the 30th, Tomio came running to the tents, and taking Mr. Banks by the arm, to whom they applied in all emergent caſes, told him that Tubora Tumaida was dying, owing to ſomething which had been given him to eat by his people, and prayed him to go inſtantly to him. Accordingly Mr. Banks went, and found the Indian very ſick. He was told, that he had been vomiting, and had thrown up a leaf, which they ſaid contained ſome of the poiſon which he had taken. Upon examining the leaf, Mr. Banks found it to be nothing more than tobacco, which the Indian had begged of ſome of their people. Mr. Banks, now knowing his diſorder, ordered him to drink of cocoa-nut milk, which ſoon reſtored him to health; and he was as cheerful as ever.

On

On the 1st of May, a chief, who had dined on board a few days before, accompanied by some of his women, who used to feed him, came on board by himself; and when dinner was on table, the captain helped him to some victuals, thinking upon this occasion he would condescend to feed himself; but he never attempted to eat, and had not one of the servants fed him, he would certainly have gone without his dinner.

In the afternoon they took the astronomical quadrant, with some other instruments, on shore; and next day having occasion to use the quadrant, to their great astonishment and concern it was missing. This was the more extraordinary, as a sentinel had been posted the whole night within a few yards of the tent in which it had been deposited; and it had never been taken out of the case in which it was packed. As the loss of this instrument would have rendered it impossible for them to have made the necessary observations respecting the transit, every possible search was made in the vicinity. At last Mr. Banks, accompanied by Mr. Green and some other gentlemen, set out for the woods, where it was thought some intelligence of the robbery might be gained, if it had been committed by the natives. In the course of their journey they met Tubora Tumaida, with a few of the natives, who was made by signs to understand, that some of his countrymen had stolen the quadrant, and that it must be produced. The chief on enquiry found that the fact was so; and by his interference, the whole was recovered without any material injury, though it had been taken to pieces.

On Wednesday the 3d, in the morning, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander attended as usual to pur-

chase provisions, but found them extremely scarce, and the markets ill supplied. Next day, with some difficulty, Mr. Banks obtained a few baskets of bread-fruit from Tubora Tumaida in the woods, which were a very seasonable relief.

On Friday the 5th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with the captain, set out in the pinnace, taking one of Tootahah's people with them, to visit that chief. They soon reached Eparre, the place where he dwelt, which was but a few miles to the west of the tents. Upon their arrival, they were immediately conducted to the chief, whilst the natives shouted round them, Taio Tootahah, "Tootahah is your friend." They found him sitting under a tree, and some old men standing round him. As soon as he had made signs for them to sit down, Captain Cook presented him with a shirt and a broad cloth garment, with which he seemed greatly pleased; and put the garment on. After eating a mouthful together in the boat, they were conducted to a large area, or court-yard, on one side of his house, where an entertainment was provided for them, consisting of wrestling. The chief sat at the upper end of the area, with several of his principal men on each side of him, by way of judges, from whom the conquerors received applause.

Ten or twelve combatants entered the area, and after many simple ceremonies of challenging each other, they engaged, endeavouring to throw one another by dint of strength; then seizing hold of each other by the thigh, the hand, the hair, or the clothes, they grappled without the least art, till one was thrown on his back; this conquest was applauded by some words from the old men, and three huzzas,

When

When this entertainment was at an end, they were informed, that some hogs and a quantity of bread-fruit were preparing for their dinner; which intelligence was the more agreeable, as their appetites were at this time exceedingly keen. But instead of dining either on shore or on board of the boat, they had the mortification of going as far as the ship, by the desire of the chief.

As soon as the chief was known to be on board the ship, the people brought plenty of bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other provisions to the fort.

On Tuesday the 9th, in the forenoon Oberea paid them a visit, accompanied by her favourite Obadee; she presented them with a hog and some bread-fruit.

The forge being now set up, and frequently at work, became not only a new subject of admiration to the Indians, but afforded the captain an additional opportunity of conferring obligations on them, by permitting the smith during his leisure hours, to convert the old iron, which they were supposed to have procured from the Dolphin, into different kinds of tools.

The natives, after repeated attempts, finding themselves incapable of pronouncing the names of the English gentlemen, had recourse to new ones formed from their own language. Mr. Cook was named Toote; Hicks, Hete; Gore, Toura; Solander, Tolano; Banks, Opane; Green, Treene; and so on for the greatest part of the ship's crew.

The next evening Mr. Banks was under the disagreeable necessity of reprimanding, in very strong terms, Tubora Tumaida, for having the insolence to snatch his gun from him, and firing it in the air; a thing which surprised Mr. Banks greatly, as he imagined him totally ignorant of

the use of it. And as their safety depended on keeping them in that state, he told him, with threats, that his touching his piece was the greatest of insults. The Indian made no reply, but set off with his family to his house at Eparre. He being a useful man, Mr. Banks, accompanied by Mr. Molineux, thought fit to go after him, and they found him among a number of people, greatly dejected. However, as Mr. Banks judiciously caused all animosity to cease, they brought him back to supper; after which the chief and his wife both slept in Mr. Banks's tent.

Soon after, Mr. Banks detected Tubora Tumaida in having stolen some nails. Mr. Banks having a good opinion of this chief, was willing to put his fidelity to the test, and several temptations were thrown in his way, among the rest a basket of nails, which proved irresistible. He confessed the fact; and upon Mr. Banks's insisting upon restitution, he declared the nails were at Eparre; this occasioned high words, and at length the Indian produced one of them. He was to have been forgiven upon restoring the rest, but not having resolution to fulfil his engagement, he fled with his furniture and family before night.

On the 27th of May, Tootahah being removed to a place called Atahourou, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Captain Cook, and some others, set out in the pinnace to pay him another visit; and after making presents of a few trifling articles, they were invited to stay the night. Mr. Banks having accepted a place in Oberea's canoe, left his companions in order to retire to rest. Notwithstanding the care Oberea took of his clothes, by
having

having them in her own custody, they were stolen with his pistols, powder horn, and many other things that were in his waistcoat pockets. The alarm was given to Tootahah, who slept in the next canoe, and who went with Oberea in search of the thief; leaving Mr. Banks with only his breeches on, and his musket uncharged. They soon returned, but without success; and Mr. Banks thought proper to put up with the loss for the present. However, he went to the hut where Captain Cook and three of his associates lay, and began to relate his melancholy tale; but instead of receiving much comfort from them, he was told, that they had shared the same fate, having lost their stockings and jackets.

They now began to make preparations for observing the transit of Venus, and, from the hints which Captain Cook had received from the Royal Society, he sent out two parties to make observations from different spots, that in case they failed at Otaheite, they might succeed elsewhere; they employed themselves in preparing their instruments and instructing such gentlemen with the use of them, as were to go out. And on Thursday the 1st of June, the next Saturday being the day of the transit, they sent the long boat to Eimayo, having on board Mr. Gore, Mr. Monkhouse, and Mr. Sporing, a friend of Mr. Banks; each furnished with necessary instruments by Mr. Green. Mr. Banks and several of the Indians went out with this party. Others were dispatched to find out a convenient spot, at such a distance from their principal station, as might suit their purpose.

Those who went to Eimayo in the long boat, after rowing best part of the night, by the help
of

of some Indians on board a canoe, which they hailed, found a proper situation for their observatory upon a rock, where they fixed their tents, and prepared the apparatus for the following day's observation.

On Saturday the 3d, as soon as it was light, Mr. Banks left them to go to the island for fresh provisions. As he was trading with the natives who belonged to Tarrao, the king of the island, his majesty arrived with his sister, whose name was Nuna, in order to pay him a visit. After being seated as is customary, the royal present was brought, consisting of a hog, a dog, some coconuts, bread-fruit, &c. A messenger was dispatched by Mr. Banks for an adze, a shirt, and some beads, which his majesty received with much pleasure. Mr. Banks returned to the observatory with his visitors, and shewed them the transit of Venus over the Sun, informing them, that he and his companions had come from their own country solely to view it in that situation.

Both the parties which were sent out, made their observation with great success. They nevertheless differed in the accounts of the times of the contacts more than might have been imagined.

Mr. Green's account was as follows :

MORNING.		Hours	Min.	Sec.
The first external contact, or first appearance of Venus on the Sun, was		9	25	4
The first internal contact or total immersion, was	- - -	9	44	4
AFTER-				

AFTERNOON.

	Hours	Min.	Sec.
The second internal contact, or beginning of the immersion	3	14	8
The second external contact, or total immersion - - -	3	32	10
Latitude of the Observatory, $17^{\circ} 15' 29''$.			
Longitude $149^{\circ} 32' 30''$ W. of Greenwich.			

There having been a scarcity of bread-fruit for some days, an enquiry was made of the cause; and the reason the Indians gave was, that there being a great crop, the fruit had been gathered to make a sort of sour paste, which the natives call Mahie, which, after fermentation, will keep a long time, and supply them in times of dearth.

Complaint was made on Monday the 12th to the captain, that the Indians had lost some bows and arrows, and strings of plaited hair; the affair was enquired into, and the fact being well attested, two dozen lashes were inflicted upon the sailors who had stolen them.

A variety of articles having been stolen by the natives at different times, the captain wished if possible to put an end to these practices by making it their common interest to prevent them. Accordingly he ordered a number of their canoes to be seized till restitution was made; but at last was prevailed on to release them.

About this time another event had nearly involved the English in a quarrel with the Indians. The captain having sent a boat on shore to get ballast, the officer not meeting immediately with what he wanted, began to pull down one of their sepulchral buildings; this measure was strenuously

ously opposed by the Indians. Mr. Banks, having received intelligence of the affair, repaired to the spot, and the matter was soon amicably terminated, there being stones sufficient found elsewhere.

On the 19th, in the evening, soon after dark, while the canoes were detained by the captain, Oberea, the queen, and several of her attendants, paid the gentlemen a visit. She came from Tootahah's palace in a double canoe, and brought with her a hog, bread-fruit, and other presents, among which was a dog. Dogs are esteemed here more delicate eating than pork; as those bred to be eaten taste no animal food, but live entirely upon vegetables; and the experiment was tried. Tupia undertook to kill and dress one, which he did, by making a hole in the ground and baking it. It was deemed a very good dish.

They were visited on the 21st, at the fort, by many of the natives, who brought various kinds of presents, and among the rest Oamo, a chief of several districts on the island, whom they had never before seen, who brought with him a hog. This chief was treated with great respect by the natives, and was accompanied by a boy and a young woman. The boy was carried upon a man's back, though he was very able to walk. Oberea, and some other of the Indians, went out of the fort to meet them, their heads and bodies being first uncovered as low as the waist. This was considered as a mark of respect; they had not noticed it before, but judged it was usually shewn to persons of distinguished rank among them. Oamo entered the tent, but the young woman, who was about sixteen, could not be prevailed upon to accompany him, though she seemed

seemed to combat with her curiosity and inclination. Dr. Solander took the youth by the hand, and conducted him in ; but the natives without, who had prevented the girl's entrance, soon found means to get him out again.

The curiosity of Mr. Banks, and the other gentlemen, being excited from these circumstances, they made enquiry who these strangers were, and were informed, that Oamo was Oberea's husband, but that by mutual consent they had been for a considerable time separated ; and that the youth and girl were their offspring. The boy was named Terridiri, and was heir apparent to the sovereignty of the island ; and he was to espouse his sister as soon as he had attained the proper age.

Monday June 26th, early in the morning, the captain set out in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Banks, to circumnavigate the island. They sailed to the eastward, and in the forenoon they went on shore, in a part of the island under the government of Ahio, a young chief, who had often visited them at their tents. They also found here some other natives of their acquaintance.

Having taken a survey of the harbour, and a large bay near which it is situated, they proposed going to the opposite side of the bay, but Titubaola, who was their conductor, not only refused to accompany them, but endeavoured to dissuade the captain and Mr. Banks from going, saying, " That country was inhabited by people who were not subjects to Tootahah, and who would destroy them all." This information did not, however, prevent the execution of their design ; and upon loading their pieces with ball, Titubaola took courage to go with them. They rowed

rowed till it was dark, when they reached a narrow neck of land that divided the island into two peninsulas, which are distinct governments. As they were not yet got into the hostile part of the country, they agreed to spend the night on shore; where they were provided with supper and lodging by a lady, named Ooratooa.

In the morning they pursued their passage for the other government. They landed in a district which was governed by a chief, named Maraita-ta, the burying place of men; and his father was called Pahairade, the stealer of boats. Notwithstanding their names were so ominous, they gave the captain and Mr. Banks a very civil reception; furnished them with provisions, and sold them a large hog for a hatchet.

The curiosity of the natives was soon excited, and a crowd gathered round the English gentlemen, but they saw only two people whom they knew. They then advanced till they reached the district, which was under the dominion of the principal chief, or king, named Waheatua. Having continued their journey along the shore for a considerable way, they at last saw the chief, and with him an agreeable young woman, about two-and-twenty, named Toudidde.

In passing through this part of the island, they found it better cultivated, and more improved than any they had hitherto met with; though the houses were but few, and those very small, but there was a great number of canoes, which excelled any they had seen, both in size and workmanship. Notwithstanding the fertility of the country, provision of every kind was very scarce.

Towards the southernmost part of the island they found a good harbour, formed by a reef,
and

and the circumjacent country remarkably fruitful.

They landed again a little farther to the east. Mathiabo, the chief, with whom they had no acquaintance, nor had ever seen before, soon came to them, and supplied them with cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit. They purchased a hog for a glass bottle, which he took in preference to every other thing that was offered him. They saw here a turkey-cock and a goose, which the Dolphin left on the island; they were remarkably fat, and seemed to be greatly admired by the Indians.

A very uncommon sight presented itself in a house near this place; several human jaw-bones were fastened to a board of a semicircular form; they seemed fresh, and had not lost any of their teeth. Mr. Banks could obtain no explanation of this mystery. They quitted this place, and arrived in a bay on the north-west side.

Several canoes came off here with some very beautiful women, who appeared to be desirous of their going on shore, to which they readily assented. They met with a friendly reception from the chief, whose name was Wiverou, at whose house they supped, in company with Mathiabo. Part of the house was allotted for them to sleep in; and soon after supper they retired to rest. Mathiabo having obtained a cloak from Mr. Banks, under pretence of using it as a coverlet, immediately made off with it, unperceived by that gentleman or his companions. News, however, of the robbery was soon brought them by one of the natives; in consequence of which intelligence they set out in pursuit of the thief, but had proceeded a very little way, before they were met

met by a person bringing back the cloak, which Mathiabo had given up through fear.

The house, upon their return, was entirely deserted; and about four in the morning, the sentinel gave the alarm that the boat was missing. Their situation was now extremely terrifying; the party consisting of but four, with a single musket and two pocket pistols, without a spare ball, or a charge of powder. After remaining in this distressful state of anxiety for a considerable time, dreading the advantage the Indians would take of it, to their great joy, the boat, which had been driven away by the tide, returned; and Mr. Banks and his companions no sooner breakfasted than they departed.

This place is situated on the north side of Tiarrabou, the south-east peninsula of the island. It is fertile and populous, and the inhabitants every where behaved with civility. The last district in Tiarrabou, in which they landed, was governed by a chief named Omoe.

Here they saw one of their eatuas, or gods; it was made of wicker work, and resembled the figure of a man; it was near seven feet in height, and was covered with black and white feathers; on the head were four protuberances, which the natives called tate etc, or little men.

They were now near the district, named Papparra, which was governed by Oamo and Oberea, where they intended to spend the night. Mr. Banks and his company landed about an hour before it was dark, and found that they were both set out to pay them a visit at the fort. They, nevertheless, slept at the house of Oberea, which, though not large, was very neat; no inhabitant
but

but her father was now in possession of it, who shewed them much civility. They took this opportunity of walking out to a point, upon which they had observed some trees called Etoa, which usually grow on the burial places of these people. They call these burying grounds Morai, which are also places of worship. They here saw an immense edifice, which they found to be the morai of Oamo and Oberea.

It consisted of an enormous pile of stone work, raised in the form of a pyramid, with a flight of steps on each side, and was nearly two hundred and seventy feet long, about one-third as wide, and between forty and fifty feet high. As the Indians were totally destitute of iron utensils to shape their stones, as well as mortar to cement them, when they had made them fit for use; a structure of such height and magnitude must have been a work of infinite labour and fatigue.

In the centre of the summit was the representation of a bird, carved in wood; close to this was the figure of a fish, which was in stone. This pyramid made part of one side of a wide court or square, the sides of which were nearly equal; the whole was walled in, and paved with flat stones. At a little distance, to the west of this edifice, was another paved square, which contained several small stages, called by the natives Ewattas, which appeared to be altars; upon them they place provisions, as sacrifices to their gods.

The inhabitants of the island of Otaheite, seem in nothing so desirous of excelling each other, as in the grandeur and magnificence of their sepulchres; and the rank and authority of Oberea was forcibly evinced upon this occasion. The gentlemen of the Endeavour, it has been observed,

did not find Oberea possessed of the same power, as when the Dolphin was at this place, and they were now informed of the cause. It seems, that about four or five months before Captain Cook's arrival, the inhabitants of Tiarrabou, the peninsula to the south-east, made a descent here, and slew many of the people; that hereupon Oberea, and Oamo, who then held the government for his son, had fled and taken refuge in the mountains; and that the victors destroyed all the houses, and pillaged the country. The turkey and goose, which had been seen in the district of Mathiabo, were among the booty; and the jaw-bones, which were discovered there, had likewise been carried off as trophies of victory.

On Friday the 30th, they arrived at Otahou-rou, where their old acquaintance Tootahah resided; he received them with great civility, and provided for them a good supper, and a convenient lodging; and notwithstanding they were so shamefully plundered the last time they slept with this chief, they spent the night in the utmost security, none of their clothes, or any other article, being missing in the morning.

On Saturday, July 1st, they returned to the fort at Port Royal Harbour; having discovered the the island, both peninsulas included, to be about one hundred miles in circumference.

Their Indian friends crowded about them upon their return, and none of them came without provisions.

Monday the 3d, Mr. Banks made an excursion, with some Indian guides, to trace the river up the valley to its source, and observe to what extent its banks were inhabited. After meeting with houses for the space of six miles, they came
up

up to one which was said to be the last that could be seen. The master of it presented them with cocoa-nuts and other fruits; and after a short visit, they continued their walk. In this tour they often passed under vaults, formed by rocky fragments, in which, they were informed, that those who were benighted often took refuge. During this tour he had a fine opportunity of searching for minerals, but found nothing which had that appearance. The stones, every where resembling those of Madeira, gave manifest signs of having been burnt. There are also evident traces of fire in the clay upon the hills, both of this and the neighbouring islands.

Mr. Banks was engaged the 4th in planting on each side of the fort a great quantity of the seeds of water melons, oranges, lemons, limes, and other plants and trees which he had brought from Rio de Janeiro. He gave of these seeds to the Indians in great plenty, and planted many of them in the woods: some of the melon-seeds, which had been planted soon after his arrival, had already produced plants, which appeared to be in a very flourishing state.

Preparations were now made for departing; and Captain Cook hoped now to quit the island, without any farther misunderstanding with the natives; but in this he was mistaken. Two foreign sailors having been out, one of them was robbed of his knife, and striving to recover it, the Indians attacked and wounded him in a dangerous manner with a stone; his companion also received a slight wound in the head. As Captain Cook would have been unwilling to have taken farther notice of the transaction, he was not sorry the offenders had made their escape.

Another affair, equally disagreeable, soon after happened. Between the 8th and 9th in the evening, two young marines retired secretly from the fort, and in the morning were not to be met with. Notice having been given for all the company to go on board the next day, and that the ship would sail that day or the day ensuing, Captain Cook began to fear that the marines intended to remain on shore. He was apprized, that no effectual steps could be taken to recover them, without risking the harmony and good fellowship which, at present, subsisted between the English and the natives; and, therefore, resolved to wait a day in hopes of their returning.

The 10th in the morning, the marines not being returned, an enquiry was made after them, when the Indians declared they did not propose returning, having taken refuge in the mountains, where it was impossible to discover them; and that each had taken a wife. In consequence of which it was intimated to several chiefs, who were in the fort with their women, among whom were Tubora Tumaida, Tomio and Oberea, that they would not be suffered to quit it till the deserters were produced. They received the intimation with very little signs either of fear or discontent, assuring the captain, that the marines should be sent back; but night coming on, Captain Cook judged it was not prudent to let the hostages remain at the fort; and he, therefore, ordered them to be brought on board. This gave an unusual alarm; and several of them, especially the females, testified their apprehensions with great agitation of mind, and floods of tears, when they were coming on board.

One of the marines was brought back in the evening by some of the Indians, who reported, that the other, and the two people who were sent to fetch them back, would be detained till Tootahah, who was one of the confined, should be liberated. Mr. Hicks was immediately dispatched, in the long boat, with several men, to rescue the English prisoners; at the same time, Captain Cook told Tootahah, that it was incumbent on him to assist them with some of his people, and to give orders, in his name, that the men should be set at liberty; for that he should expect him to answer for the event. Tootahah immediately complied, and this party recovered the men without any opposition.

At the time the chiefs were set on shore from the ship, those at the fort were also released, and after remaining with Mr. Banks about an hour and a half, they all returned to their respective places of residence. When the deserters were examined, it was discovered, that the account which the Indians had given was no way false: they had become fond of two females, and it was their design to keep themselves concealed till the ship had set sail, and continue upon the island.

Tupia, who had been prime minister of Oberea, when she was at the pinnacle of her authority, and was also the principal priest of the island, and, therefore, intimately acquainted with the religion of the country, having often testified a desire to go with them, on Wednesday the 12th, in the morning, came on board, with a boy about twelve years of age, his servant, named Taiyota, and, finally, requested the gentlemen to receive him. As it was thought he would be useful to them in many particulars, they unanimously
F 3
agreed

agreed to comply with his request. Tupia then went on shore, for the last time, to see his friends; and took with him several baubles to give them, as parting tokens of remembrance.

Thursday the 13th of July, the ship was visited by a multitude of the gentlemen's friends, and surrounded by numberless canoes, which contained the inferior natives. They weighed anchor about twelve, and the Indians took leave of the gentlemen on board, weeping in a friendly and affecting manner. Tupia supported himself in this scene with a becoming fortitude; tears flowed from his eyes, it is true, but the effort that he made to conceal them did him additional honour. He went with Mr. Banks to the mast-head, where he continued waving his hand to the canoes, as long as they remained visible.

According to Tupia's account, the island could furnish above six thousand fighting men, whereby a computation of the number of inhabitants may easily be made.

They have no European fruits, garden stuff, or pulse, nor grain of any species, but many valuable vegetable productions of their own. Their tame animals are hogs, dogs, and poultry; there is not a wild animal in the island, except ducks, pigeons, parroquets, and a few other birds; rats being the only quadruped; and there are no serpents. The sea, however, supplies them with great variety of excellent fish.

With regard to the people, they are in general rather of a larger make than Europeans. The males are tall, robust, and finely shaped. The females, of the superior class, are likewise generally above our common size; but those of the lower

lower rank are rather below it, and some of them are remarkably little.

Their natural complexion is a fine clear olive, or what we call Brunette; their skin is delicately smooth, and agreeably soft. The shape of their faces is in general handsome, and their eyes are full of sensibility and expression; their teeth are likewise remarkably white and regular, and their breath entirely free from any disagreeable smell; their hair is, for the most part, black. Their motions are easy and graceful, but not vigorous; their deportment is generous and open, and their behaviour affable and courteous.

Both sexes frequently wear a piece of cloth, of the manufacture of the island, tied round their heads in the form of a turban; and the women take no little pains in plaiting human hair into long strings, which being folded into branches, are tied on their foreheads by way of ornament.

They stain their bodies by indenting or pricking the flesh with a small instrument made of bone, cut into short teeth; which indentures they fill with a dark blue or blackish mixture, prepared from the smoke of an oily nut, burnt by them instead of candles, and water; this operation, which is called by the natives *tattaowing*, is exceedingly painful, and leaves an indelible mark on the skin. It is usually performed when they are about ten or twelve years of age, and on different parts of the body.

They clothe themselves in cloth and matting of various kinds; the first they wear in fair, the latter in wet weather. They are in different forms, no shape being preserved in them; nor are the pieces sewed together. The women of a superior class wear three or four pieces; one, which

is of considerable length, they wrap several times round their waists, which falls down to the middle of the leg. Two or three other short pieces, with a hole cut in the middle of each, are placed on one another, and their heads coming through the holes, the long ends hang before and behind, both sides being open, by which means they have the free use of their arms.

The men's dress is very similar, differing only in one instance, which is that part of the garment, instead of falling below the knees, is brought between the legs. This dress is worn by all ranks of people, the only distinction being quantity in the superior class. At noon both sexes appear almost naked, wearing only the piece of cloth that is tied round the waist.

The boys and girls go quite naked; the first till they are seven or eight years old, the latter till they are about five. Their houses they seldom use but to sleep in, or to avoid the rain, as they eat in the open air, under the shade of a tree. Their clothes serve them at night for covering, and there are no divisions or apartments. The master and his wife repose in the middle; then the married people; next to these the unmarried females, and at a small distance the men who are unmarried.

The houses of the chiefs, however, differ in some degree; there are some very small, and so built as to be carried in canoes: all sides of them are inclosed with the leaves of the cocoa-nut; the air, nevertheless, penetrates; in these the chief and his wife alone sleep. There are also houses which are general receptacles for the inhabitants of a district. These are much larger.

When

When a chief kills a hog, which is but seldom he divides it equally among his vassals; dogs and fowls are more common.

When the bread-fruit is not in season, they are supplied by cocoa-nuts, bananas, plantains, &c.

Their cookery is confined to baking, and their drink is generally water, or the milk of the cocoa-nuts, though there were instances in which some of them drank so freely of the English liquors, as to become quite intoxicated; this, however, seemed to proceed more from ignorance than design, as they were never known to repeat a debauch of this kind a second time. They were told, indeed, that the chiefs sometimes became inebriated by drinking the juice of a plant called Ava, but of this they saw no instance during the time they remained on the island.

The chiefs generally eat alone, unless when visited by a stranger, who is sometimes permitted to become a second in their mess; leaves of trees being spread before them, serve as a table-cloth; and their attendants, who are numerous, having placed a basket before the chiefs, containing their provisions, and a cocoa-nut shell of fresh and salt water, seat themselves round them. They then begin by washing their mouth and hands, after which they eat a mouthful of bread-fruit and fish, dipt in salt water alternately, till the whole is consumed, taking a sup of salt water likewise between almost every morsel. The bread-fruit and fish, being all eaten, they next have either plantains or apples, which they never eat without being pared. During this time a soft paste is prepared from the bread-fruit, which they sup out of a cocoa-nut shell; this finishes the meal, and the hands and mouth are again washed, as at the beginning.

ginning. They devour vast quantities of food at a meal.

It is not a little surprising, that the inhabitants of this island, who seemed exceedingly sensible of the pleasures of society, should have an universal aversion to the least intercourse with each other at their meals; and so rigid are they in the observance of this unusual custom, that even brothers and sisters have their separate baskets to contain their provisions, and generally sit some yards distance when they eat, with their backs turned towards each other, not exchanging a single word during the whole time of their repast. The middle aged of superior rank, usually betake themselves to sleep after dinner, but what is remarkable, the older people are not so lazy; music, dancing, wrestling, and shooting with the bow, or throwing a lance, constitute the chief part of their diversions.

Flutes, which have been mentioned before, and drums, are the only musical instruments among them; their drums are formed of a circular piece of wood, hollow at one end only, which is covered with the skin of a shark, and they are beaten with the hand instead of a stick. Their songs are extempore, and frequently in rhyme, but consist of only two lines.

Among their other amusements they have a dance, named timorodee, which is performed by ten or a dozen young females, who put themselves into the most wanton attitudes that can possibly be imagined, keeping time, during the performance, with the greatest nicety and exactness; from these dances the women are immediately excluded on their becoming pregnant.

Their

Their personal cleanliness is an object that merits peculiar attention. Both sexes never omit to wash with water three times a day; when they rise, at noon, and before they go to rest. They also keep their clothes extremely clean; so that in the largest communities no disagreeable effluvia ever arise, nor is there any other inconvenience than heat.

The chief manufacture of Otaheite is cloth; of this cloth there are three different sorts, which are made of the bark of as many different trees, viz. the mulberry, the bread-fruit, and a tree not very unlike the wild fig-tree, which is found in some parts of the West Indies. The mulberry-tree, which the Indians call Aouta, produces the finest cloth, which is seldom worn, but by those of the first rank. The next sort, which is worn by the lower class of people, is made of the bread-fruit tree, and the coarsest of the tree resembling the fig-tree. This last sort, though more useful than the two former, on account of its keeping out water, which neither of the others will, is exceedingly scarce, being manufactured but in small quantities.

The cloth becomes exceedingly white by bleaching, and is dyed of a red, yellow, brown, or black colour; the first of which is exceedingly beautiful, and equal, if not superior, to any in Europe.

Matting of various kinds is another considerable manufacture, in which they excel, in many respects, the Europeans. They make use of the coarser sort to sleep on, and in wet weather they wear the finer.

They greatly excel in the basket and wicker work; both men and women employ themselves
at

at it, and can make it of a great number of different patterns.

Their fishing-lines are esteemed the best in the world, made of the bark of the Erowa, a kind of nettle which grows on the mountains; they are strong enough to hold the heaviest and most vigorous fish, such as bonitas and albicores; in short, they are extremely ingenious in every expedient for taking all kinds of fish.

The tools which these people make use of for building houses, constructing canoes, hewing stone, and for felling, cleaving, carving, and polishing timber, consist of nothing more than an adze of stone, and a chissel of bone, most commonly that of a man's arm; and for a file, or polisher, they make use of a rasp of coral, and coral sand.

Some of their smaller boats are made of the bread-fruit tree, which is wrought with much difficulty, being of a light, spongy nature. Their canoes are all shaped with the hand, the Indians not being acquainted with the method of warping a plank.

Their language is soft and musical, abounding in vowels, and is easy to be pronounced. But whether it is copious, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were not sufficiently acquainted with it to know. As very few, either of their nouns or verbs, are declinable, it must consequently be very imperfect. They found means, however, to be mutually understood without much difficulty.

The following specimen will possibly enable the reader to form some idea of their language.

Teine, a brother.

Huaheine, a wife.

Tooheine, a sister.

Oowhau, the thighs.

Tane,

Tane, a husband.
 Arce, a chief.
 Midee, a child.
 Aheine, a woman.
 Erowroo, the head.
 Matau, the eyes.
 Eahoo, the nose.
 Meyoooo, the nails.

Mutee, to kiss.
 Eawow, to scold.
 Emòto, to box.
 Eei, to eat.
 Matte roah, to die.
 Mayneenee, to tickle.
 Itopia, to fall.

Here the management of the sick falls to the lot of the priests; and their method of cure consists chiefly of prayers and ceremonies, which are repeated till the patients recover or die.

The religion of these people appeared to be exceedingly mysterious. They emphatically style the Supreme Being, the Caufer of Earthquakes; but their prayers are more generally addressed to Tane, supposed to be a son of the first progenitors of nature.

They believe in the existence of the soul in a separate state; and that there are two situations, differing in their degrees of happiness, which they consider as receptacles for different ranks, but not as places of reward and punishment. They suppose that their chiefs and principal people will have the preference to those of inferior rank; as they imagine their actions no way influence their future state, and that their deities take no cognizance of them whatsoever.

The office of priest is hereditary; there are several of them, and of all ranks; the chief is respected next to their kings; and they are superior to the rest of the natives, not only in point of divine knowledge, but also in that of navigation and astronomy.

The priests here are no way concerned with the ceremony of marriage, it being a simple agreement between the man and woman; and when they chuse to separate, it is done with as little ceremony as that of their marriage.

Slings, with which they are very dexterous, pikes, headed with stone, and long clubs, made of wood, remarkably hard and heavy, constitute their weapons.—With these they fight with great obstinacy and cruelty, giving no quarter to either man, woman, or child, if they fall into their hands in time of battle.

There is nothing among them substituted for money, or a general medium, by which every object may be purchased or procured; neither can any permanent good be unlawfully obtained by force or fraud.

In a word, in a government so little polished, though distributive justice cannot be regularly administered; as there can at the same time be but few crimes for the exercise of it, the want of this justice is not so severely felt as in civilized countries.

July the 13th, after leaving the Island of Otaheite, they sailed with a gentle breeze and clear weather; and were informed by Tupia, that four islands, which he called Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola, were at the distance of about one or two days sail; and that hogs, fowls, and other refreshments, which had lately been scarce, were to be got there in abundance. They accordingly steered their course in search of these islands, and on the 15th discovered the island of Huaheine; and next morning, they founded near the north-west part of the island, but found no bottom with seventy fathoms.

Several

Several canoes immediately put off, but they appeared fearful of coming near the ship, till they saw Tupia, who totally removed their apprehensions, and they ventured to come alongside; and upon assurances of friendship, the King of Huaheine and his queen went on board. Astonishment was testified by their majesties at every thing that was shewn to them; yet they made no researches, and appeared satisfied with what was presented to their observation, making no enquiry after any other objects, though it was reasonable to suppose, that a building of such novelty and extent as the ship, must have afforded many curiosities. The king, whose name was Oree, made a proposal to exchange names with Captain Cook, which was readily assented to. The custom of exchanging names is very prevalent in this island, and is considered as a mark of friendship. They found the people here nearly similar to those of Otaheite in almost every circumstance, except, if Tupia may be credited, they were not addicted to thieving.

Having come to an anchor, in a small, but fine harbour, on the west side of the island, Captain Cook went ashore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and some other gentlemen, with Tupia and the king. The instant they landed, Tupia uncovered himself as low as his waist, and desired Mr. Monkhouse to follow his example. Being seated, he now begun a speech, which lasted about twenty minutes; the king, who stood opposite to him, answering in what seemed to be set replies. During this discourse, he delivered, at different times, a handkerchief, a black silk neckcloth, some beads and plantains, as presents to their Eatua, or deity. He received in return for the Eatua, of the

English, a hog, some young plantains, and two bunches of feathers, which were carried on board. These ceremonies were considered as a kind of ratification of a treaty between the English and the King of Huaheine.

Wednesday the 19th, they went ashore, and carried some hatchets with them, with which they procured three very large hogs. As they proposed to sail in the afternoon, the king, accompanied by some others of the natives, came on board to take his leave, when his majesty received from Captain Cook a small pewter plate, with the following inscription: "His Britannic Majesty's ship Endeavour, Lieutenant Cook commander, 16th July, 1769." He also was presented with some medals, or counters, resembling the coin of England, and a few other trifles.

This island is distant from Otaheite about thirty leagues, and is about twenty miles in circumference. The people are of a very lazy disposition, though they are stouter and larger made than those of Otaheite.

From Huaheine they sailed for the Island of Ulietea, and in the afternoon came within a league or two of the shore. They anchored in a bay, which is formed by a reef, on the north side of the island. Two canoes of natives soon came off from the shore, and brought with them two small hogs, which they exchanged for some nails and beads. On the 20th, Mr. Banks, the captain, and others, went on shore, accompanied by Tupia, who introduced them with the same kind of ceremonies that had taken place on their landing at Huaheine; after which, Captain Cook took possession of this and the adjacent islands, in the name of the King of Great Britain.

On

On the 24th they got under fail, and steered to the northward within the reef, towards an opening of five or six leagues distant. In effecting this, he was in the greatest danger of striking on a rock; the man who sounded, crying out on a sudden, two fathoms, at which they were much alarmed, but happily got clear without receiving any damage.

On the 25th, they were within a league or two of the Island of Otaha, but the wind continuing contrary, they could not get near enough to land till the 28th in the morning; when Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went in the long boat, with the master, to sound a harbour on the east side of the island, which they found safe and convenient, with good anchorage. They then went on shore, and purchased some hogs and fowls, and a large quantity of yams and plantains.

This island appeared to be more barren than Ulietea, but the produce was much the same.

On the 29th they sailed to the northward; and in the afternoon, finding themselves to windward of some harbours that lay on the west side of Ulietea, they intended to put into one of them, in order to stop a leak which they had sprung in the powder room, and to take in some additional ballast.

On the 2d of August they anchored in twenty-eight fathoms water, in a convenient harbour. In the interim, many of the natives came off, and brought hogs, fowls, and plantains, which were purchased upon very moderate terms.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander now went on shore, and spent the day very agreeably; the natives shewing them great respect. In one house they observed some very young girls, dressed in the

neatest manner, waiting for the strangers, to accost them; these girls were the most beautiful the gentlemen had ever seen.

Before their departure they were entertained with a dance, different from any they had seen before. The performer put upon his head a large piece of wicker work, about four feet long, of a cylindrical form, covered with feathers, and edged round with shark's teeth. Having this head-dress on, which is called a Whou, he began to dance with a slow motion, frequently moving his head, so as to describe a circle with the top of his wicker cap, and sometimes throwing it so near the faces of the bye-standers, as to make them jump back; this they considered as an excellent piece of humour; and it always produced a hearty laugh, when practised upon any of the English gentlemen.

On the 3d they saw another company of dancers, consisting of some of the principal females of the island. They advanced side-ways, keeping time, with great exactness, to the drums, which beat quick and loud; soon after, they began to shake themselves, in a very whimsical manner, and put their bodies into a variety of strange postures; sometimes standing in a row one behind another; sometimes sitting down; and at others falling with their faces to the ground, and resting on their knees and elbows; moving their fingers at the same time with a quickness scarcely to be credited. The chief dexterity, however, of these dancers, as well as the amusement of the spectators, consisted in the lasciviousness of their attitudes and gestures, which decency forbids us to describe.

On the 5th, some hogs and fowls; and several large pieces of cloth, many of them being fifty
or

or sixty yards in length, together with a quantity of plantains and cocoa-nuts, were sent to Captain Cook as a present, from the earee rahie of a neighbouring island called Bolabola, accompanied with a message, that he was then on the island, and intended waiting on the captain the next day.

The king, however, did not visit them agreeable to his promise; but his absence was not in the least regretted, as he sent three very agreeable young women to demand something in return for his present. After dinner they set out to pay his majesty a visit on shore, as he did not think proper to come on board. As this man was the earee rahie of the Bolabola men, who had conquered this, and were the dread of all the neighbouring islands, they were greatly disappointed, instead of finding a vigorous, enterprising young chief, to see a poor, feeble, decrepid old dotard, half blind, and sinking under the weight of age and infirmities. He received them without either that state or ceremony which they had hitherto met with among the other chiefs.

They had now plenty of hogs on board; but as these animals could not be brought to eat any sort of European grain, or any provender whatever, that the ship afforded, they were reduced to the disagreeable necessity of killing them immediately on their leaving those islands; and the fowls all died of a disorder in their head, with which they were seized soon after they were brought on board.

As they were detained longer at Ulietea in repairing the ship than they expected, they did not go on shore at Bolabola; but after giving the general name of the Society Islands to the whole group, which lie between the latitude of 16 deg. 10 min.

10 min. and 16 deg. 55 min. south, they pursued their course, standing southwardly for an island, to which they were directed by Tupia, at above a hundred leagues distant, which they discovered on the 13th, and were informed by him that it was called Ohiteroa.

The next morning they stood in for land. When they came near the shore, they could perceive that the inhabitants were armed with lances of a considerable length. The appearance of the boat soon drew together a great number of them upon the beach, two of whom leaped into the water, and endeavoured to gain the boat, but she soon left them behind; several others made the same attempt, but with as little success.

The boat having doubled the point where they intended to land, rowed towards the shore, and began to make preparations for landing; upon which a canoe, with some of the natives on board, came off towards them. They ordered Tupia to acquaint these people, that they did not intend doing them any injury, but wanted to traffic with them with nails, which they shewed them; this information encouraged them to come alongside the boat, and they accepted of some nails, which were given them, with much apparent pleasure and satisfaction. In a few minutes, however, several of them unexpectedly boarded the boat, with an intention of dragging her on shore; some muskets were immediately discharged over their heads, which had the desired effect, all of them leaping directly into the sea, and put back to the shore as fast as they could paddle. The captain gave up all hopes of establishing a friendly intercourse with these people, and returned to the ship.

This island does not shoot up into high peaks, like the others which they visited, but is more level and uniform, and divided into small hillocks, some of which are covered with groves of trees; they saw no bread-fruit, and not many co-coa-nut trees, but great numbers of the tree called Etoa, were planted all along the shore.

On the 15th, they sailed to the southward, and on the 25th, they celebrated the anniversary of their leaving England, from whence they had been absent one year; a large Cheshire cheese, which had been carefully preserved for that purpose, was brought out, and a barrel of porter tapped, which proved to be as good as any they had ever drank in England.

On the 7th of October, they discovered land at west by north, and in the afternoon of the next day, they came to an anchor opposite the mouth of a little river, about a mile and a half from the shore. The Captain, with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander and some other gentlemen, accompanied by a party of marines, went on shore in the evening, and proceeded to a few small houses which they saw at a little distance. Taking the advantage of their absence from the boat, some of the natives, who had concealed themselves behind the bushes, suddenly rushed out, and ran towards it, brandishing the long wooden lances which they had in their hands in a threatening manner. The cockswain fired a musketoon over their heads, which did not seem to intimidate them; he then fired a second time over their heads, but with no better effect; alarmed at the situation of the boat, as they were now got near enough to discharge their lances at it, the cockswain levelled his piece at them, and shot one man dead on the spot.

Struck

Struck with astonishment at the fall of their companion, they retreated to the woods with the utmost precipitation. The report of the gun soon brought the advanced party back, and they immediately returned to the ship.

On Monday the 9th, in the morning, a great number of the natives were seen near the place where the gentlemen in the yawl had landed the preceding evening, and the greatest part of them appeared to be unarmed. The long-boat, pinnace and yawl, being ordered out, and manned with marines and sailors, Captain Cook, together with Mr. Banks, the rest of the gentlemen, and Tupia, went on shore, and landed on the opposite side of the river, over-against several Indians who were sitting on the ground.

They started up as soon as the gentlemen began to land, and their intentions appeared very hostile, brandishing their weapons in the usual threatening manner; upon which a musket was fired at some distance from them, at the effect of which, the ball happening to strike the water, they appeared rather terrified, and desisted from their menaces. Tupia spoke to them, and informed them, that they wanted to traffic with them for provisions. They readily consented to trade, and requested the English gentlemen to cross the river and come over to them; which was agreed to, upon condition that the natives would quit their weapons; but this, the most solemn assurances of friendship, could not prevail on them to comply with.

The gentlemen in their turn, entreated the Indians to come over to them, which, after some time, they prevailed on one of them to do; he was presently followed by several others, bringing

ing their weapons with them. They did not appear to set any great value on the beads, iron, &c. which were presented to them, nor would they give any thing in return; but proposed to exchange their weapons for those belonging to the English, which being consequently objected to, they endeavoured several times to snatch them out of their hands. Tupia, by direction of the gentlemen, gave them notice, that any further offer of violence, would be punished with instant death. One of them had, nevertheless, the audacity to snatch Mr. Green's hanger, and retiring a few paces, flourished it over his head; he, however, paid for this temerity with his life; and with great difficulty the hanger was recovered.

This behaviour of the natives, added to the want of fresh water, induced Captain Cook to continue his course round the head of the bay. He was still in hopes of getting some of the Indians on board, and by presents, added to civil usage, convey through them a favourable idea of the English to their fellow countrymen; and thereby settle a good correspondence with them. Soon after, an event occurred, though attended with disagreeable circumstances, that promised to facilitate this design. Two canoes appeared making towards land, and Captain Cook proposed intercepting them with his boats. One of them got clear off, but the Indians in the other, finding it impossible to escape the boats, began to attack them with their paddles: this compelled the Endeavour's people to fire upon them, when four of the Indians were killed, and the other three, who were youths, jumped into the water, and endeavoured to swim to shore: they were, however, taken up and brought on board. They were at
first

first greatly terrified, thinking they should be killed; but Tupia, by repeated assurances of friendship, removed their fears, and they afterwards eat very heartily of the ship's provisions. When they retired to rest, in the evening, they appeared perfectly easy in their minds, and slept very quietly. The next morning, they testified much satisfaction, when told they were going to be released. They informed Captain Cook, that there was a particular kind of deer upon the island, likewise taro, capes, romara, yams, a kind of long pepper, bald coots, and black birds.

On the 12th several Indians came off in a canoe; they were disfigured in a strange manner, danced and sung, and appeared at times to be peaceably inclined, at others to menace hostilities; but notwithstanding Tupia strongly invited them to come on board, none of them would quit the canoe. Whilst the Endeavour was getting clear of the shambles, five canoes full of Indians came off, and seemed to threaten the people on board, by brandishing their lances, and other hostile gestures; a four pounder, loaded with grape-shot, was therefore ordered to be fired, but not pointed at them. This had the desired effect, and made them drop astern. Next morning nine canoes full of Indians came from the shore, and five of them, after having consulted together, pursued the Endeavour, apparently with a hostile design. Tupia was desired to acquaint them, that immediate destruction would ensue, if they persevered in their attempts; but words had no influence, and a four pounder, with grape shot, was fired, to give them some notion of the arms of their opponents. They were terrified at this kind of reasoning, and paddled away in precipitation.

The following day, Sunday the 15th, in the afternoon, a large canoe, with a number of armed Indians, came up, and one of them, who was remarkably clothed with a black skin, found means to defraud the captain of a piece of red baize, under pretence of bartering the skin he had on for it. As soon as he had got the baize into his possession, instead of giving the skin in return, agreeable to his bargain, he rolled them up together, and ordered the canoe to put off from the ship, turning a deaf ear to the repeated remonstrances of the captain against his unjust behaviour. After a short time this canoe, together with the fishing boats which had put off at the same time, came back to the ship, and trade was again begun. During this second traffic with the Indians, one of them unexpectedly seized Tupia's little boy, Tayota, and pulling him into his canoe, instantly put her off, and paddled away with the utmost speed. Several muskets were immediately discharged at the people in the canoe; and one of them receiving a wound, they all let go the boy, who before was held down in the bottom of the canoe. Tayota taking advantage of their consternation, immediately jumped into the sea, and swam back to the Endeavour. In consequence of this attempt to carry off Tayota, Captain Cook called the cape off which it happened Cape Kidnappers.

As every circumstance that tends to elucidate the manners and customs of these people must attract the attention of the curious reader, we cannot omit Tayota's behaviour upon recovering from his fright, occasioned by his being kidnapped. He produced a fish, and acquainted Tupia, that he designed to make an offering of it to his

God, or Eatua, as a testimonial of his gratitude for his deliverance. Tupia approved of his intention, and by his direction the fish was cast into the sea. This is an evident proof, that even these unenlightened savages, by the mere impulse of nature, believe in the existence of a particular providence.

The Endeavour now passed a small island, white and high, supposed to be inhabited only by fishermen, as it appeared quite barren, and was named Bare Island, on the 17th, Captain Cook gave the name of Cape Turnagain to a head-land.

The land between this cape and Kidnapper's Bay is unequal, and resembles the high downs of England. There appeared numerous inhabitants, and several villages. Wednesday the 18th, the Endeavour came abreast of a peninsula in Portland Island, named Terakako, when a canoe, with five Indians, came up to the ship. Two chiefs, who were in this canoe, came on board, where they remained all night, and were treated with great civility. The chiefs would neither eat nor drink, but the servants made up for their master's abstinence by their voracious appetites. The three boys had given these natives an account of the hospitality and liberality of the English, which had prevailed upon them to pay this visit.

Thursday the 19th, the Endeavour passed a remarkable head-land, which Captain Cook named Gable End Foreland. Here three canoes came up, and one Indian came on board; he received some small presents, and retired to his companions. He wore a new garment of white silky flax, with a border of black, red, and white.

On

On the 20th, they anchored in a bay, about two leagues to the north of the Foreland. The natives, in canoes, invited them hither, and behaved very amicably. There appeared to be two chiefs, who came on board. They received presents of linen, which gave them much satisfaction; but they did not hold spike-nails in such estimation as the inhabitants of some of the other islands. The captain, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander went on shore, and were courteously received by the inhabitants, who did not appear in numerous bodies, to avoid giving offence. The captain had the pleasure to find fresh water, in the course of a tour round the bay. They remained on shore all night. Dogs, with small pointed ears, and very ugly, were the only tame animals seen here. They have sweet potatoes, like those of North America, in great quantities; and the cloth plant grows here spontaneously. There is plenty of fish in the bay, such as crabs, crawfish, and shipjacks, or horse mackerel, which are larger than those upon our coasts.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander visited their houses, and were kindly received. Fish constituted their principal food at this time, and the root of a sort of fern served them for bread; which, when roasted upon a fire, and divested of its bark, was sweet and clammy; in taste not disagreeable, but unpleasant, from its number of fibres. Vegetables were, doubtless, at other seasons very plentiful. The women paint their faces red, which, so far from increasing, diminishes the very little beauty they have. The men's faces were not, in general, painted, but some were rubbed over with red ochre from head to foot, their apparel not excepted. The women wore a girdle made of the

blade of grass, under a petticoat, and to this girdle was tied, in front, a bunch of fragrant leaves. They seemed to hold chastity in but little estimation.

The 22d, in the evening, they sailed from this bay, which, by the natives, is called Tegadoo. The wind being contrary, they put into another bay a little to the south, called by the natives Tolaga, in order to complete their wood and water, and extend their correspondence with the natives.

On the 24th, Mr. Gore and the marines were sent on shore to guard the people employed in cutting wood and filling water. Captain Cook, Mr. Banks, and the doctor also went on shore. In their route they found in the vales many houses uninhabited, the natives residing chiefly in slight sheds on the ridges of the hills, which are very steep. In a valley between two very high hills they saw a curious rock that formed a large arch, opposite to the sea. This cavity was in length above seventy feet, in breadth thirty, and near fifty in height; it commanded a view of the hills and the bay, which had a very happy effect. Indeed, the whole country about the bay is agreeable beyond description, and, if properly cultivated, would be a most fertile spot. Upon their return, they met an old man, who entertained them with the military exercises of the natives, which are performed with the patoo patoo and the lance. The former is used as a battleaxe; the latter is ten or twelve feet in length, made of extreme hard wood, and sharpened at each end. A stake was substituted for their old warrior's supposed enemy; he first attacked him with his lance, when, having pierced him, the patoo patoo was used to demolish

demolish his head, and the force with which he struck would, at one blow, have split any man's skull.

At the watering-place, the Indians, by desire, sung their war song, which was a strange medley of shouting, sighing, and grimace, at which the women assisted. The next day, Captain Cook and the other gentlemen went upon an island at the entrance of the bay, and met with a canoe that was sixty-seven feet in length, six in breadth, and four in height; her bottom, which was sharp, consisted of three trunks of trees, and the sides and head were curiously carved. Their favourite figure is a volute or spiral, which is sometimes single, double, and triple, and is done with great exactness, though the only instruments the gentlemen saw, were an axe made of stone, and a chisel.

There are many beautiful parrots, and great numbers of birds of different kinds, particularly one whose note resembled the European black-bird; but here is no ground fowl or poultry, nor were there any quadrupeds, except rats and dogs, and these were not numerous. The dogs are considered as delicate food, and their skins serve for ornaments to their apparel.

October 29th, they set sail from this bay, and sailing to the northward, they fell in with a small island, about a mile distant from the north-east point of the main; and this being the most eastern part of it, the captain named it East Cape, and the island East Island: it was but small, and appeared barren. Next morning, about nine, several canoes came off from shore, with a number of armed men, who appeared to have hostile intentions. Before these had reached the ship,

another canoe, larger than any that had yet been seen, full of armed Indians, came off, and made towards the Endeavour with great expedition. The captain now judging it expedient to prevent, if possible, their attacking him, ordered a gun to be fired over their heads; this not producing the desired effect, another gun was fired with ball, which threw them into such consternation, that they immediately returned much faster than they came. Next morning, at day break, they saw between forty and fifty canoes along shore, many of which came off in the manner they had done the day before, shouting and menacing an attack. One of their chiefs, in the largest of the canoes, made several harangues, and by the menacing flourish of his pike, seemed to bid the ship defiance; but the gentlemen continuing to invite them to trade, they at last came close along-side; and the chief who had been declaiming, after uttering a sentence, took up a stone and threw it against the side of the ship, which appeared to be a declaration of hostilities, as they instantly seized their arms. One of them took some linen that was hanging to dry, and made off with it. A musket was fired over his head to make him return, but this did not prevail; and even after another was fired at him with small shot, which hit him in the back, he still persevered in his design. Upon this the rest of the Indians set up their song of defiance. They did not, however, make any preparations for attacking the ship; but the captain judged, that if he suffered them to go off without convincing them of his power of avenging the insult, it might give an unfavourable opinion of the English to the natives on shore. He accordingly fired a four pounder, which passed

ed

ed over them; and the effect it had in the water terrified them so greatly, that they made to shore with the utmost precipitancy.

The Endeavour passed the night under an island about twenty miles from the main, which they named the Mayor. In the morning of the 3d, they gave the name of The Court of Aldermen to a number of small islands that lay contiguous. The chief, who governed the district from Cape Turnagain to this coast, was named Teratu.

On the 4th, three canoes came along-side with several Indians. These canoes were built very different from the others, being formed of the trunks of single trees, made hollow by burning: they were not carved, or in any shape ornamented. These Indians were of a darker complexion than the others, but made use of the same modes of defiance, and threw several stones and some of their lances into the ship.

In the morning of the 5th, a great number of canoes, with near two hundred men, armed with spears, lances, and stones, made their appearance; seemingly resolved to attack the ship, and desirous of boarding her, but could not determine at what part, changing their stations, and paddling round her. These motions kept the crew upon the watch, in the rain, whilst Tupia, at the request of the captain, used every dissuasive argument he could suggest to prevent their carrying their apparent designs into execution; but his expostulations did not pacify them, till some muskets were fired; they then laid aside their hostile intentions, and began to trade. They sold two of their weapons without fraud; but a third, for which they had received cloth, they would

would not deliver up ; and instead of paying any attention to the demand that was made of it, they only laughed at them, and turned their expostulations into ridicule.

As the captain proposed to stay some days at this place, that he might observe the transit of Mercury, he judged it expedient to chastise these people for their insolence and knavery ; accordingly, some small shot were fired upon the principal offender, and a musket ball went through his canoe. His companions left him to his fate, without taking the least notice of him, though he was wounded ; and continued to trade without any discomposure. They for some time traded very fairly, but returning to their mal-practices, another canoe was fired upon and struck : they soon after paddled away, whilst a round shot was fired over them.

Several of the Indians came off to the ship on the 6th, but behaved much better than they had done the preceding day. They had with them an old man, named Tojava, who had before testified his probity and discretion ; and he appeared to be of superior rank to the rest. He came on board with another Indian, when the captain presented them with some nails, and two pieces of cloth of English manufacture. Tojava then acquainted the captain, that they were often visited by freebooters from the north, who stripped them of all they could lay their hands on, and often made captives of their children and wives ; and that being ignorant who the English were upon their arrival, the natives had taken the alarm upon the ship's appearing off the coast ; but were now satisfied of their good intent. Probably,

bably, their poverty and misery may be ascribed to the ravages of this banditti, who often strip them of every necessary of life.

The assurances of friendship which they had received from the gentlemen on board, seemed to have a proper influence upon the natives, who were now very tractable and submissive. In a word, the natives now treated the English with great hospitality; a large supply of wood and good water was obtained, and the ship being very foul, was heeled, and her bottom scrubbed in the bay.

A great variety of plants were collected here by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; they had never observed any of the kind before.

Early in the morning of the 9th, several canoes brought a prodigious quantity of mackerel, one sort of which was no way different from the mackerel caught on our coast. These canoes were succeeded by many others, equally well loaded with the same sort of fish; and the cargoes purchased were so great, that when salted, they might be considered as a month's provision for the whole ship's company.

This being a very clear day, the astronomer (Mr. Green) and the other gentlemen landed to observe the transit of Mercury, and whilst the observation was making, a large canoe, with various commodities on board, came along-side the ship; and Mr. Gore, the officer who had then the command, being desirous of encouraging them to traffic, produced a piece of Otaheitean cloth, of more value than any they had yet seen, which was immediately seized by one of the Indians, who obstinately refused either to return it,
or

or to give any thing in exchange; he paid dearly, however, for his temerity, being shot dead on the spot.

The death of this young Indian alarmed all the rest: they fled with great precipitancy, and for the present, could not be induced to renew their traffic with the English. But when the Indians on shore heard the particulars related by Tojava, who greatly condemned the conduct of the deceased, they seemed to think that he merited his fate.

This transaction happened, as has been mentioned, whilst the observation was making of the transit of Mercury, when the weather was so favourable, that the whole transit was viewed without a cloud intervening. Mr. Green made the observation of the ingress, whilst Captain Cook was engaged in ascertaining the time, by taking the sun's altitude. In consequence of this observation having been made here, this bay was called Mercury Bay.

The Indians sup before sun-set, when they eat fish and birds baked or roasted. A female mourner was present at one of their suppers; she was seated upon the ground, and wept incessantly, at the same time repeating some sentences in a doleful manner, but which Tupia could not explain; at the termination of each period she cut herself with a shell upon her breast, her hands, or her face; notwithstanding this shocking bloody spectacle greatly affected the gentlemen present, yet all the Indians saw it with indifference.

November 11th, great plenty of oysters were procured from a bed which had been discovered, and they proved exceedingly good. Next day
the

the ship was visited by two canoes, with unknown Indians; after some invitation they came on board, and they all trafficked without any fraud.

They sailed from this bay, after taking possession of it in the name of the King of Great Britain, on the 15th. A number of islands, of different sizes, appeared toward the north-west, which were named Mercury Islands. The inhabitants, though numerous, have no plantations; their canoes are very indifferently constructed, and are no way ornamented.

Upon this shore iron sand is in plenty to be found, which proves that there are mines of that metal up the country, it being brought down by a rivulet from thence.

On the 18th, in the morning, the Endeavour steered between the main and an island, which seemed very fertile, and as extensive as Ulietea. Many canoes, filled with Indians, came alongside, and the Indians sung their war song; the Endeavour's people paying them no attention, they threw a volley of stones, and then paddled away; but they presently returned and renewed their insults. However, upon a musket being fired at one of their boats, they made a precipitate retreat.

In the evening they cast anchor, and early the next morning they sailed up an inlet. The Endeavour was now in a bay, called by the natives Ooahaouragee, and Captain Cook, with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, &c. went in the boats to examine it, and they did not return till next morning. At the entrance of a wood they met with a tree ninety-eight feet high from the ground to the first branch, quite straight, and nineteen feet in circumference; and they found
still

still larger trees of the same kind as they advanced into the wood. The captain called this river Thames, being not unlike our river of that name.

The ship, at their departure, was surrounded with canoes, which induced Mr. Banks to remain on board, that he might trade with the Indians. Though the traders were honest in their dealing, there was one amongst them who took a fancy to a half minute glass, but was detected in secreting it, and he was punished with the cat-o'-nine-tails. The other Indians endeavoured to save him from this punishment; but being opposed, they got their arms from the canoes, and some of the people in them attempted to get on board. Mr. Banks and Tupia now coming upon deck, the Indians applied to Tupia, but he having no influence upon Mr. Hicks, the commanding officer, informed them of the nature of the offender's intended punishment, which pacified them, as they imagined he was going to be put to death.

On the 23d, they tided it down the river, and on the 24th they steered along the shore, between the islands and the main, and in the evening anchored in an open bay, in about fourteen fathoms water. Here they caught a large number of fish of the sciennie, or bream kind; from which the captain named this Bream Bay. No inhabitants were visible; but from the fires perceived at night, the gentlemen concluded it was inhabited.

The 26th, Captain Cook continued his course slowly along the shore, to the north. This day two canoes came up, and some of the Indians came on board, when they trafficked very fairly. Two larger canoes, soon after followed them, and coming up to the ship, the people in them hailed the others, when they conferred together, and afterwards

afterwards came along-side of the ship. The last two canoes were finely ornamented with carving, and the people, who appeared to be of higher rank, were armed with various weapons; they held in high estimation their patoo patoos, which were made of stone and whalebone, and they had ribs of whale, with ornaments of dog's hair, which were very curious.

The Endeavour passed a remarkable point of land, which the captain called Cape Bret, in honour of the baronet of that name. Within a mile to the north-east by north is a curious rocky island; it is arched, and has a pleasing effect at a distance. The natives call this Cape Motugogogo: It forms a bay to the west, which contains many small islands, and Captain Cook named the point at the north-west entrance Point Pococke. The inhabitants had the same itch for cheating as the others. One of the midshipmen was so nettled at being imposed upon, that he had recourse to a whimsical expedient by way of revenge; taking a fishing line, he threw the lead with so much dexterity, that the hook caught the Indian, who had imposed upon him, by the buttocks, when the line breaking, the hook remained in his posteriors. These Indians were strong and well-proportioned; their hair was black, and tied up in a bunch, stuck with feathers; the chiefs among them had garments made of fine cloth, ornamented with dog's skin; and they were also tataowed.

On the 27th, the Endeavour was among a number of small islands, from which several canoes came off; but the Indians, from their frantic gestures, seemed disordered in their minds; they threw their fish into the ship by handfuls,

without demanding any thing by way of barter. Some other canoes also came up, who saluted the ship with stones. It was then judged time to bring them to reason; and a musket, with small shot, being fired, a general terror was now spread amongst them, and they all made a very precipitate retreat. Among the fish, obtained from these canoes, were cavelles in great plenty, and for this reason the captain called these islands by the same name.

For several days the wind was so very unfavourable, that the vessel rather lost than gained ground. On the 29th, they got into a large bay, where they anchored on the south-west side of several islands; after which the ship was surrounded by thirty-three large canoes, containing near three hundred Indians, all armed.—Some of them were admitted on board; and Captain Cook gave a piece of broad cloth to one of the chiefs, and some small presents to the others. They traded peaceably for some time, being terrified at the firearms, the effect of which they were not unacquainted with; but whilst the captain was at dinner, on a signal given by one of their chiefs, all the Indians quitted the ship, and they attempted to tow away the buoy. A musket was now fired over them, but it produced no effect; small shot was then fired at them, but it did not reach them. A musket loaded with ball was, therefore, ordered to be fired, and the son of one of the chiefs was wounded in the thigh by it; which induced them immediately to throw the buoy overboard. If these Indians had been under any kind of military discipline, they might have proved a much more formidable enemy; but acting thus, without any plan or regulation, they

they only exposed themselves to the annoyance of firearms, whilst they could not possibly succeed in any of their designs.

The captain, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander landed upon the island. The gentlemen were now in a small cove, and they were presently surrounded by near four hundred armed Indians; but the captain not suspecting any hostile design on the part of the natives, remained peaceably disposed. The gentlemen marching towards them, drew a line, intimating that they were not to pass it; they did not infringe upon this boundary for some time, but at length they sung the song of defiance, and began to dance, whilst a party attempted to draw the Endeavour's boats on shore. These signals for an attack being immediately followed by the Indians breaking in upon the line, the gentlemen judged it time to defend themselves, and accordingly the captain fired his musket, loaded with small shot, which was seconded by Mr. Banks discharging his piece, and two of the men followed his example. This threw the Indians into great confusion, and they retreated; but were rallied again by one of their chiefs, who shouted and waved his patoo patoo. The doctor now pointed his musket at this hero, and hit him: this stopt his career, and he took to flight with the other Indians. They retired to an eminence in a collective body, and seemed dubious whether they should return to the charge. The Indians had in this skirmish two of their people wounded, but none killed. Peace being again restored, the gentlemen began to gather celery and other herbs; but suspecting some of the natives were lurking about with evil designs, they repaired to a cave, which was at a small distance;

here they found the chief, who had that day received a present from the captain; he came forth with his wife and brother, and solicited their clemency. It appeared that one of the wounded Indians was a brother of this chief, who was under great anxiety lest the wound should prove mortal; but his grief was in a great degree alleviated, when he was made acquainted with the different effects of small shot and ball; he was at the same time assured, that upon any future hostilities being committed, ball would be used. This interview terminated very cordially, after some trifling presents were made to the chief and his companions.

The prudence of the gentlemen upon this occasion cannot be much commended. Had these four hundred Indians boldly rushed in upon them at once with their weapons, the musketry could have done very little execution; but supposing twenty or thirty of the Indians had been wounded, for it does not appear their pieces were loaded with ball, but only small shot, there would have remained a sufficient number to have massacred them, as it appears they do not give any quarter, and none could have been expected upon this occasion.

Being again in their boats, they rowed to another part of the same island, when landing and gaining an eminence, they had a very agreeable and romantic view of a great number of islands, well inhabited and cultivated. The inhabitants of an adjacent town approached unarmed, and testified great humility and submission.—Some of the party on shore, who had been very violent for having the Indians punished for their fraudulent conduct, were now guilty of trespasses equally reprehensible, having forced into some of the plantations

tations, and dug up potatoes. The captain upon this occasion shewed strict justice, in punishing each of the offenders with twelve lashes. One of them being very refractory upon the occasion, and complaining of the hardship, thinking an Englishman had a right to plunder an Indian with impunity, was flogged out of his opinion with six additional lashes. Probably, his adding, "that in this he had only followed the example of his superiors," might have had no little weight in procuring him this last sentence.

On Tuesday the 5th, in the morning, they weighed anchor, but were soon becalmed, and a strong current setting towards the shore, they were driven in with such rapidity, that they expected every moment to run upon the breakers, which appeared above water not more than a cable's length distance; they were so near the land, that Tupia, who was totally ignorant of the danger, held a conversation with the Indians, who were standing on the beach. They were happily relieved, however, from this alarming situation by a fresh breeze suddenly springing up from the shore.

December 7th, several canoes put off and followed the Endeavour, but a breeze arising, Captain Cook did not wait for them. They beat to windward four days, and made but little way. On the 10th, the land appeared low and barren, but was not destitute of inhabitants; the next morning they stood in with the land, which forms a peninsula, and which the captain named Knuckle Point. On the 16th, they came off the northern extremity of New Zealand, which the captain called North Cape. Their situation varied but little till the 24th, when they discovered

land, which they judged to be the islands of the Three Kings, though they did not resemble the description of them in Dalrymple's account.

January 1, 1770, they tacked and stood to eastward, and on the 3d they saw land again; it was high and flat, and trended away to the south-east, beyond the reach of the naked eye. It is remarkable, that the Endeavour was three weeks in making ten leagues to the westward.

On the 9th they saw a point remarkably high to the east-north-east; the captain named it Albetros Point. At about two leagues distance from this point, to the north-east, they discovered a remarkable high mountain, equal in height to that of Teneriffe, the summit of which was covered with snow, and it was named Mount Egmont. This day some very heavy showers of rain fell, accompanied with thunder and lightning. The captain proposed careening the ship here, and taking in wood and water; and accordingly, on the 15th, steered for an inlet. In passing the point of the bay, they observed an armed sentinel on duty, who was twice relieved. Four canoes came from shore to visit the ship, but none of the Indians would venture on board, except an old man, who seemed of elevated rank; he was received with the utmost hospitality. The captain and the other gentlemen now went on shore, where they met with plenty of wood and water, and were very successful in fishing; catching some hundred weight in a short time.

On the 16th, the Endeavour's people were engaged in careening her, when three canoes came off with a great number of Indians, and brought several of their women with them. This circumstance was judged a favourable presage of their
peaceable

peaceable disposition, but they soon gave proofs of the contrary, by attempting to stop the long boat that was sent on shore for water, when Captain Cook had recourse to the old expedient of firing some shot, which intimidated them for the present.

Tupia in conversing with them, and making many enquiries concerning the curiosities of New Zealand, asked them, if they had ever before seen a ship of the magnitude of the Endeavour; to which they replied, they had never seen such a vessel, nor ever heard that one had been upon the coast. There is great plenty of fish in all the coves of this bay. The inhabitants catch their fish as follows: their net is cylindrical, extended by several hoops at the bottom, and contracted at the top; the fish, going in to feed upon what is put in the net, are caught in great abundance. There are also birds of various kinds, and in great numbers, particularly parrots, wood pigeons, water hens, hawks, and many different singing birds. An herb, a species of philadelphus, was used here instead of tea; and a plant, called Teegoomme, resembling rug cloaks, served the natives for garments. The environs of the cove where the Endeavour lay are covered entirely with wood. The air of the country is very moist, and has some qualities that promote putrefaction; as birds that had been shot but a few hours were found with maggots in them.

The captain, Mr. Banks, and the doctor visited a cove, about two miles from the ship. There was a family of Indians, who appeared greatly alarmed at the approach of the gentlemen. They found, by the provisions of this family, that they were cannibals, here being several human bones
that

that had been lately dressed and picked. They made no secret of this abominable custom, but answered Tupia, who was desired to ascertain the fact, with great composure, that his conjectures were just, that they were the bones of a man, and testified by signs that they thought human flesh delicious food; but that they never ate any save their enemies. There was a woman in this family whose arms and legs were cut in a shocking manner, and it appeared she had thus wounded herself, because her husband had lately been killed and eaten by the enemy.

Some of the Indians brought four skulls one day to sell, which they rated at a very high price. The gentlemen likewise saw the bail of a canoe, which was made of a human skull. In a word, their ideas were so horrid and brutal, that they seemed to pride themselves upon their cruelty and barbarity, and took a peculiar pleasure in shewing the manner in which they killed their enemies, it being considered as very meritorious to be expert at this destruction. The method used was to knock them down with their patoo patoos, and then rip up their bellies.

An amazing number of birds usually began their melody about two o'clock in the morning, and serenaded the gentlemen till the time of their rising. This harmony was very agreeable, as the ship lay at a convenient distance from the shore to hear it. These feathered choiristers, like the English nightingales, never sing in the day time.

Some of the company in their excursion met with fortifications that had not the advantage of an elevated situation, but were surrounded by two or three wide ditches, with a draw bridge, which, though simple in its structure, is capable
of

of answering every purpose against the arms of the natives. Not only those who are killed, but the prisoners are likewise devoured by the victors. From what has been related by such unquestionable authority, there can remain no doubt with the unprejudiced reader, that the inhabitants of this part of the globe are cannibals.

On the 24th they visited a hippah, which was situated on a very high rock, hollow underneath, forming a fine natural arch, one side of which joined to the land, and the other rose out of the sea. This hippah was partly surrounded with a pallisade. Here they met with a cross resembling a crucifix, which was ornamented with feathers, and which was erected as a monument for a deceased person; but they could not learn how his body was disposed of.

Some of the people who had been sent out to gather celery, met with several of the natives, among whom were some women, whose husbands had lately fallen into the hands of the enemy, and they were cutting many parts of their body in the most shocking manner with sharp stones, in testimony of their excessive grief. What made this ceremony appear ridiculous as well as shocking, was, that the male Indians, who were with them, paid not the least attention to it, but with the greatest unconcern imaginable, employed themselves in repairing some empty huts upon the spot.

On the 30th, two posts were erected, inscribed with the ship's name, &c. as usual; one was placed at the watering place, with the Union flag upon it, and the other in the same manner, on the island of Motuara; and the inhabitants being informed, that these posts were meant as memorials

rials of the Endeavour having touched at this place, promised never to destroy them. The captain then named this inlet Queen Charlotte's Sound; and took possession of it in the name, and for the use of his majesty, and a bottle of wine was drank to the queen's health.

On the 6th, in the morning, the Endeavour sailed out of the bay, which the ship's company, from an abhorrence of the brutal custom that prevails here of eating men, called Cannibal Bay. The natives about this sound are not above four hundred in number; they are scattered along the coast, and live upon fern root and fish; the latter of which was the only commodity they traded in.

The Endeavour having left the sound, steered eastward, and about six o'clock in the evening they were greatly alarmed at their being carried, by the rapidity of the current, very close to one of the two islands which lie off Cape Koamaroo, at the entrance of the sound. The ship was in such imminent danger, that they expected, every minute, she would be dashed to pieces; but letting go an anchor, and veering one hundred and sixty fathoms of cable, she was brought up, when they were not above two cables length from the rocks: in this situation they were obliged to wait for the ebb of the tide, which was not till after midnight. At three o'clock in the morning they weighed anchor, and a fine breeze springing up soon after, they were carried through the strait with great velocity. At the entrance of the strait, on the north side, there is a small island, which was named Entry Island.

On the 8th, they were off Cape Palliser, when they discovered that the land trended to the north-

north-east towards Cape Turnagain. Three canoes came off in the afternoon, with several people in them; they made a good appearance, and came on board with great alacrity. One old man was tataowed in a very remarkable manner; he was likewise marked with a streak of red paint across the nose, and over both cheeks; his hair was quite white as well as his beard. His garment was made of flax with a wrought border, under which was a kind of petticoat, made of a cloth called Aoorée Waow; his ears were decorated with teeth and pieces of green stone.

On the 14th of February, about sixty Indians in four double canoes, came within a stone's cast of the ship, which they beheld with surprise. Tupia endeavoured to persuade them to approach nearer, which they refused, and made toward the shore, but did not reach it till after it was dark. They had various winds and seas till the 4th of March, when they saw several whales and seals. On the 9th they saw a ledge of rocks, and soon afterwards another ledge, three leagues from the shore, which they passed to the north during the night, and discovered the others under their bow at bay-break. Thus they had a narrow escape from destruction.

In the morning they sailed northward, and on the day following, discovered a barren rock, about a mile in circumference, very high, and five leagues from the main land. This was called Solander's Island. On the 13th they discovered a bay, which contains several islands, behind which, if there be depth of water, there must be shelter from all winds. Captain Cook called this Dusky Bay.

They

They had now almost passed the whole of the north-west coast of Tovy Poenammoo; the face of the country afforded nothing worth notice, but a ridge of rocks of a stupendous height, “ which Dr. Hawkesworth describes as totally barren and naked, except where they are covered with snow, which is to be seen in large patches in many parts of them, and has probably lain there ever since the creation of the world; a prospect more rude, craggy, and desolate than this country affords from the sea, cannot possibly be conceived; for as far inland as the eye can reach, nothing appears but the summits of rocks, which stand so near together, that, instead of vallies, there is only fissures between them.”

By the 27th they had sailed round the whole country, and determined to depart from the coast, as soon as they had taken in a stock of water. For this purpose the captain went ashore in the long-boat, and found an excellent watering place, and a proper birth for the ship. A council of the officers was now held, as to the passage they should take to England; when it was resolved to return by the East-Indies, and with that view to steer for the east coast of New Holland, and then follow the direction of that coast to the northward.

This resolution being taken, they sailed at day-break, on March 31, 1770, and taking their departure from an eastern point, which they had seen on the 23d, they called it Cape Farewell.

Abel Janßen Tasmen, a Dutchman, was the first European that made a discovery of New Zealand, to which he gave the name of Staaten Land; that is, the land of the States General. Tasmen never went on shore, as the Indians attacked

tacked him soon after he came to an anchor, in the bay to which he gave the name of Murderers Bay: this was in December 1642.

The situation of these islands is between 34 and 48 deg. of south latitude, and 181 and 194 deg. of west longitude. The natives call the northern island Eaheinomauwe, and the southernmost Tovy Poenammoo.

Eaheinomauwe, though hilly, and in some places mountainous, is well stored with wood, and there is a rivulet in every valley. The soil of the valleys is light, but is so fertile, as to be well adapted for the plentiful production of all sorts of the fruits, plants, and corn of Europe.

Dogs and rats are the only quadrupeds that were seen, and of the latter only a very few. The inhabitants breed the dogs for the sole purpose of eating them. The birds are hawks, owls, quails; and there are song-birds, whose note is wonderfully melodious.

Tovy Poenammoo appears to be a barren country, is very mountainous, and almost destitute of inhabitants.

The sea which washes these islands, abounds, with fish, which are equally delicate and wholesome food. They seldom came to anchor but they caught enough, with hook and line only, to supply the whole ship's crew.

This country abounds with forests, filled with very large, straight, and clean timber. Upwards of four hundred species of plants were found, almost all of which are unknown in England. There is only one shrub or tree in this country which produces fruit, and that is a kind of berry almost tasteless; but they have a plant which answers all the uses of hemp and flax. There

are two kinds of this plant, the leaves of one of which are yellow, and the other a deep red, and both of them resemble the leaves of flags. Of these leaves they make lines and cordage, and much stronger than any thing of the kind in Europe.

The men of this country are as large as the largest Europeans. Their complexion is brown, but little more so than that of a Spaniard. They are full of flesh, but not lazy and luxurious; and are stout and well shaped. The women possess not that delicacy which distinguishes the European ladies; but their voice is singularly soft, which, as the dress of both sexes is similar, chiefly distinguishes them from the men.

The inhabitants of New Zealand are as modest and reserved in their behaviour and conversation as the most polite nations of Europe. The women indeed were not dead to the softer impressions; but their mode of consent was, in their idea, as harmless as the consent to marriage with us, and equally binding for the stipulated time.

These Indians anoint their hair with oil, melted from the fat of fish or birds. Both sexes, but the men more than the women, mark their bodies with black stains, called Amoco. Exclusive of the amoco, they mark themselves with furrows. These furrows make a hideous appearance, the edges being indented, and the whole quite black. The paintings on their bodies resemble fillagree work, and the foliage in old chased ornaments; but no two are painted exactly after the same model. The people of New Zealand frequently left the breech free from these marks, which the inhabitants of Otaheite adorned beyond any other.

.. Their

Their dress is formed of the leaves of the flag split into slips, which are interwoven, and made into a kind of matting. One piece of this matting being tied over the shoulders, reaches to the knees; the other piece being wrapped round the waist, falls almost to the ground.

The women never tie their hair on the top of their head, nor adorn it with feathers; and are less anxious about dress than the men. Their lower garment is bound tight round them, except when they go a fishing, and then they are careful that the men shall not see them.

The ears of both sexes are bored, and the holes stretched so as to admit a man's finger. The ornaments of their ears are feathers, cloth, bones, and sometimes bits of wood. The men wear a piece of green talc, or whalebone, with the resemblance of a man carved on it, hanging to a string round the neck. One man had the gristle of his nose perforated, and a feather being passed through it, projected over each cheek.

These people shew less ingenuity in the structure of their houses, than in any thing else belonging to them; they are from sixteen to twenty-four feet long, ten or twelve wide, and six or eight in height. The frame is of slight sticks of wood, and the walls and roof are made of dry grass, pretty firmly compacted. Some of them are lined with the bark of trees, and the ridge of the house is formed by a pole, which runs from one end to the other. The door is only high enough to admit a person crawling on hands and knees, and the roof is sloping. There is a square hole near the door, serving both for window and chimney, near which is the fire-place.

The canoes of this country are not unlike the whale-boats of New England, being long and narrow. The larger sort seem to be built for war, and will hold from thirty to one hundred men. One of these at Tolaga measured near seventy feet in length, six in width, and four in depth.

These vessels are rowed with a kind of paddles, between five and six feet in length, the blade of which is a long oval, gradually decreasing till it reaches the handle; and the velocity with which they row with these paddles is really surprising. The vessels are steered by two men, having each a paddle, and sitting in the stern; but they can only sail before the wind, in which direction they move with considerable swiftness.

These Indians use axes, adzes, and chissels, with which last they likewise bore holes. The chissels are made of jasper, or of the bone of a man's arm; and their axes and adzes of a hard black stone.

Their warlike weapons are spears, darts, battle-axes, and the patoo patoo. The spear, which is pointed at each end, is about sixteen feet in length, and they hold it in the middle, so that it is difficult to parry a push from it. Whether they fight in boats or on shore, the battle is hand to hand, so that they must make bloody work of it.

When they came to attack the English, there was usually one or more thus distinguished in each canoe. It was their custom to stop at about fifty or sixty yards distance from the ship, when the commanding officer, arising from his seat, and putting on a garment of dog's skin, used to direct them how to proceed.

In

In the war-dance their motions are numerous, their limbs are distorted, and their faces are agitated. Their tongue hangs out of their mouths to a vast length, and their eye-lids are drawn so as to form a circle round the eye; they shake their darts, brandish their spears, and wave their patoo patoos to and fro in the air. They accompany this dance with a song, which is sung in concert; every strain ending with a loud and deep sigh. There is an activity and vigour in their dancing, which is truly admirable; and their idea of keeping time in music is such, that sixty or eighty paddles will strike at once against the sides of their boats, and make only one report.

With regard to religion, they acknowledge one superior being, and several subordinate. Their mode of worship could not be learned, nor was any place proper for that purpose seen.

A great similitude was observed between the dress, furniture, boats and nets of the New Zealanders, and those of the inhabitants of the South Sea islands, which furnished a strong proof, that the common ancestors of both were natives of the same country. Indeed the inhabitants of these different places have a tradition, that their ancestors migrated from another country many ages since; and they both agree, that this country was called Heawige. But perhaps a yet stronger proof that their origin was the same, arises from the similitude of their language, which appears to be only different dialects.

They sailed from Cape Farewell on the 31st of March, 1770, and had fine weather and a fair wind till the 9th of April, when they saw a tropic bird. On the 16th a small land-bird perched

on the rigging, from which they concluded they were near land; but they found no ground with one hundred and twenty fathoms. At six o'clock in the morning of the 19th, they discovered land four or five leagues distant; the southernmost part of which was called Point Hicks, in compliment to Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant. At noon they discovered another point of the same land, rising in a round hillock, extremely like the Ram-Head at the entrance of Plymouth Sound, for which reason Captain Cook gave it the same name. What they had yet seen of the land was low and even; and the inland parts were green, and covered with wood. They now saw three water-spouts at the same time, one of which continued a quarter of an hour.

On the 27th they saw several of the inhabitants walking along the shore, four of them carrying a canoe on their shoulders; but as they did not attempt coming off to the ship, the captain took Messrs. Banks and Solander and Tupia in the yawl, to that part of the shore where the natives appeared, near which four small canoes laid close inland. The Indians sat on the rocks till the yawl was within a quarter of a mile of the shore, and then ran away into the woods. The surf beating violently on the beach, prevented the boat from landing.

At five in the evening they returned to the ship, and a light breeze springing up, they sailed to the northward, where they discovered several people on shore. They brandished their weapons, and threw themselves into threatening attitudes. They talked to each other with great emotion; and each of them held a kind of cimeter in his hand.

They

They anchored opposite a village of about eight houses, and observed an old woman and three children come out of a wood, laden with fuel for a fire: all of them, as well as the woman, were quite naked. The old woman frequently looked at the ship with the utmost indifference, and, as soon as she had made a fire, they set about dressing their dinner with perfect composure.

Having formed a design of landing, they manned the boats, and took Tupia with them; and they had no sooner come near the shore, than two men advanced, as if to dispute their setting foot on land. The captain threw them beads, nails, and other trifles, which they took up, and seemed to be delighted with. He then made signs that he wanted water, and used every possible means to convince them that no injury was intended. They now made signs to the boat's crew to land, on which they put the boat in; but they had no sooner done so, than the two Indians came again to oppose them. A musket was now fired between them, on the report of which one of them dropt a bundle of lances, which he instantly snatched upon again. One of them then threw a stone at the boat, on which the captain ordered a musket, loaded with small shot, to be fired, which wounding the eldest of them on the legs, he retired with speed. The people in the boats now landed, imagining that the wound which this man had received would put an end to the contest; in this, however, they were mistaken, for he immediately returned with a kind of shield, and advancing with great intrepidity, they both discharged their lances at the boat's crew, but did not wound any of them. Another musket was now fired at them; on which they threw another lance,

lance, and then took to their heels. The crew now went up to the huts, in one of which they found the children, who had secreted themselves behind some bark. Here they left some pieces of cloth, ribbons, beads, and other things; and taking several of the lances, re-embarked in the boat.

They now sailed to the north point of the bay, where they found a plenty of fresh water. Some men having been sent to get wood and water, they no sooner came on board to dinner, than the natives came down to the place, and examined the caiks with great attention, but did not offer to remove them.

On Tuesday, May the 1st, the south point of the bay was named Sutherland Point, one of the seamen, of the name of Sutherland, having died that day, and been buried on shore. This day Messrs. Banks, Solander, the captain, and a few other gentlemen, went on shore, and left more presents in the huts, such as looking-glasses, combs, &c. but the former ones had not been taken away.

The second lieutenant, Mr. Gore, having been with a boat to dredge for oysters, saw some Indians, who made signs for him to come on shore, which he declined. Having finished his business, he sent the boat away, and went by land with a midshipman, to join the party that was getting water. In their way they met with more than twenty of the natives, who followed them so close, as to come within a few yards of them. Mr. Gore stopped and faced them; on which the Indians stopped also, and when he proceeded again they followed him; but they did not attack him, though they had each man his lance. The
Indians

Indians coming in sight of the waterers, stood still at the distance of a quarter of a mile, while Mr. Gore and his companions reached their ship-mates in safety.

Tupia having learnt to shoot, frequently strayed alone to shoot parrots; and the Indians constantly fled from him with as much precipitation as from the English.

They fished with great success here; and the second lieutenant struck, what is called the sting-ray, which weighed near two hundred and fifty pounds. Soon after a fish of the same kind was caught, which weighed three hundred and fifty pounds.

While Captain Cook remained in the harbour, the English colours were displayed on shore, daily, and the name of the ship, with the date of the year, was carved on a tree near the place where they took in their water.

They sailed from Botany Bay, as Captain Cook had named this place, on the 6th of May, 1770; at noon were off a harbour which they called Port Jackson, and in the evening near a bay, to which they gave the name of Broken Bay.

On the 13th they saw the smoke of many fires on a point of land, which was therefore called Smoky Cape. As they proceeded northward from Botany Bay, the land appeared high and well covered with wood. Two days after the captain discovered a high point of land, which he called Cape Byron.

They had, for some days past, seen the sea-birds, called boobies, which, from half an hour before sun-rising, to half an hour after, were continually passing the ship in large flights; from which it was conjectured, that there was a river or inlet of shallow water to the southward, where they

they went to feed in the day, returning in the evening to some islands to the northward. In honour of Captain Hervey, this bay was called Hervey's Bay.

The captain and Tupia, with a party, went on shore the 23d. They landed a little within the point of a bay, which led into a large lagoon, by the sides of which grows the true mangrove. There were many nests of a singular kind of ant, as green as grass, in the branches of these mangroves; which likewise afforded shelter for immense numbers of green caterpillars; their bodies were covered with hairs, which, on the touch, gave a pain similar to the sting of a nettle, but much more acute. They saw, among the sand banks, many birds larger than swans, which they imagined were pelicans; and they shot a kind of bustard, which weighed seventeen pounds. This bird proved very delicate food, and gave name to the place, which was called Bustard Bay. They likewise shot a duck of a most beautiful plumage, with a white beak. They found vast numbers of oysters of various sorts, and, among the rest, some hammer oysters of a curious kind.

While the gentlemen were in the woods, several of the natives came down and took a survey of the ship, and then departed. They sailed the next morning, and on the day following were abreast of a point, which lying immediately under the tropic, the captain called Cape Capricorn, on the west side of which they saw an amazing number of large birds resembling the pelican, some of which were near five feet high.

On the 27th, in the morning they sailed to the northward, and to the northernmost point of land the captain gave the name of Cape Manifold, from

the number of high hills appearing above it. Between this cape and the shore is a bay called Keppel's Bay, and some islands bearing the name of the same gentleman. In this place the captain intended to lay the ship ashore and clean her bottom; and accordingly landed, in search of a proper place for the purpose.

They found walking extremely incommodious, the ground being covered with grass, the seeds of which were sharp, and bearded. They were likewise tormented with the perpetual stinging of mosquitoes. In the interior parts of the country they found gum-trees, on the branches of which were white ants nests formed of clay, as big as a bushel. On another tree they found black ants, which formed their lodging in the body of it, after they had eaten away the pith; yet the trees were in a flourishing condition. They found butterflies in such incredible numbers, that whatever way they looked, many thousands were to be seen in the air; while every bough and twig was covered with multitudes. They likewise discovered on dry ground, where it was supposed to have been left by the tide, a fish about the size of a minnow, having two strong breast fins, with which it leaped away as nimbly as a frog. There being no good water to be found here, they did not lay the ship ashore, as they intended.

After passing Cape Cleveland, they ranged northward along the shore, towards a cluster of islands, on one of which about forty men, women, and children, were standing together, and looking at the ship with a curiosity never observed among these people before. Here Messrs. Banks and Solander went on shore with the captain, whose chief view was to procure water, which

which not being easily to be got, they soon returned on board, and the next day arrived near Trinity Bay, so called, because it was discovered on Trinity Sunday.

As no accident remarkably unfortunate had befallen our adventurers, during a navigation of more than one thousand three hundred miles, upon a coast every where abounding with the most dangerous rocks and shoals; no name expressive of distress had hitherto been given to any cape or point of land which they had seen. But they now gave the name of Cape Tribulation to a point which they had just discovered, as they here became acquainted with misfortune.

This cape is in 16 deg. 6 min. south lat. and 214 deg. 39 min. west longitude.

To avoid the danger of some rocks, they shortened sail and kept standing off from six o'clock in the evening till near nine, with a fine breeze and bright moon. They had got from fourteen into twenty-one fathoms water; when suddenly they fell into twelve, ten, and eight fathoms, in a few minutes. Every man was instantly ordered to his station, and they were on the point of anchoring, when, on a sudden, they had again deep water, so that they thought all danger was at an end, concluding they had sailed over the tail of some shoals which they had seen in the evening. In less than an hour, however, the water shallowed at once from twenty to seventeen fathoms; and before soundings could be again taken, the ship struck against a rock, and remained fixed, but from the motion given her from the beating of the surge. Every one was instantly on deck, with countenances fully expressive of the agitation of their minds. As they knew they were not near the shore, they
concluded

concluded they had struck against a rock of coral, the points of which being sharp, and the surface so rough, as to grind away whatever is rubbed against it, though with a gentle motion, they had reason to dread the horror of their situation!

The sails being taken in, and boats hoisted out to examine the depth of water, they found that the ship had been carried over a ledge of the rock, and lay in a hollow within it. She beat so violently against the rock, that the crew could scarcely keep on their legs. The moon now shone bright, by the light of which they could see the sheathing boards float from the bottom of the vessel; till at length the false keel followed, so that they expected instant destruction. Their best chance of escaping seemed now to be by lightening her. They therefore instantly started the water in the hold, and pumped it up. The decayed stores, oil-jars, casks, ballast, six of their guns, and other things, were thrown over-board, in order to get at the heavier articles; and in this business they were employed till day-break, during all which time it was observed, that not an oath was sworn; so much were the minds of the sailors impressed with a sense of their danger.

At day light they saw land at eight leagues distance; but not a single island between them and the main; so that the destruction of the greater part of them would have been inevitable, had the ship gone to pieces. It happened, however, that the wind died away to a dead calm before noon. As they expected high water at eleven o'clock, every thing was prepared to make another effort to free the ship; but the tide fell so much short of that in the night, that she did not

float by eighteen inches, though they had thrown overboard near fifty tons weight; they now, therefore, renewed their toil, and threw overboard every thing that could be possibly spared. As the tide fell, the water poured in so rapidly, that they could scarcely keep her free by the constant working of two pumps. Their only hope now depended on the midnight tide, and preparations were accordingly made for another effort to get the ship off. The tide began to rise at five o'clock, when the leak likewise increased to such a degree, that three pumps were kept going till nine o'clock, at which time the ship righted; but so much water had been admitted by the leak, that they expected she would sink as soon as the water should bear her off the rock.

Their situation was now deplorable beyond description; and the imagination must paint what would baffle the powers of language to describe. They knew that when the fatal moment should arrive, all authority would be at an end. The boats were incapable of conveying them all on shore; and they dreaded a contest for the preference, as more shocking than the shipwreck itself; yet it was considered, that those who might be left on board, would eventually meet with a milder fate than those who, by gaining the shore, would have no chance but to linger the remains of life among the rudest savages in the universe, and in a country where firearms would barely enable them to support a wretched existence.

At twenty minutes after ten the ship floated, and was heaved into deep water; when they were happy to find she did not admit more water than she had done before; yet as the leak had for a considerable time gained on the pumps, there

there was now three feet nine inches water in the hold. By this time the men were so worn by fatigue of mind and body, that none of them could pump more than five or six minutes at a time, and then threw themselves, quite spent, on the deck. The succeeding man being fatigued in his turn, threw himself down in the same manner, while the former jumped up and renewed his labour; thus mutually struggling for life, till the following accident had like to have given them up a prey to absolute despair.

Between the inside lining of the ship's bottom, and the outside planking, there is a space of about seventeen or eighteen inches. The man who had hitherto taken the depth of water at the well, had taken it no farther than the ceiling; but being now relieved by another person, who took the depth to the outside planking, it appeared by this mistake, that the leak had suddenly gained upon the pumps, the whole difference between the two plankings. This circumstance deprived them of all hopes, and scarce any one thought it worth while to labour for the longer preservation of a life which must so soon have a period. But the mistake was soon discovered; and the joy arising from such unexpected good news, inspired the men with so much vigour, that before eight o'clock in the morning, they had pumped out considerably more water than they had shipped. They now talked confidently of getting the ship into some harbour, and set heartily to work to get in their anchors; one of which, and the cable of another, they lost. Having a good breeze from the sea, they got under sail at eleven o'clock, and stood for the land.

As they could not discover the exact situation of the leak, they had no prospect of stopping it within side of the vessel; but the following expedient, which one of the midshipmen had formerly seen tried with success, was adopted. They took an old studding-sail, and having mixed a large quantity of oakum and wool, chopped small, it was stitched down in handfuls on the sail, as light as possible; the dung of their sheep and other filth being spread over it. Thus prepared, the sail was hauled under the ship by ropes, which kept it extended till it came under the leak, when the suction carried in the oakum and wool from the surface of the sail. This experiment succeeded so well, that instead of three pumps, the water was easily kept under with one.

They hitherto had no further view than to run the ship into a harbour, and build a vessel from her materials, in which they might reach the East Indies; but they now began to think of finding a proper place to repair her damage, and then to pursue their voyage on its original plan. At six in the evening they anchored seven leagues from the shore; and next morning they passed two islands, which were called Hope Islands. In the afternoon the master was sent out, with two boats, to sound, and search for a harbour where the ship might be repaired. They anchored at sun-set in four fathoms, two miles from the shore. One of the mates being out in the pinnace, returned at nine o'clock, reporting, that he had found just such a harbour as was wanted, at the distance of two leagues.

At six o'clock the next morning they sailed, and soon anchored about a mile from the shore, when the captain went out, and found the channel

nel

nel very narrow, but the harbour was better adapted to their present purpose, than any place they had seen in the whole course of their voyage. As it blew very fresh this day and the following night, they could not venture to run into the harbour, but remained at anchor during the two succeeding days.

The men by this time began to be afflicted with the scurvy, and their Indian friend, Tupia, was so bad with it, that he had livid spots on both his legs. Mr. Green, the astronomer, was likewise ill of the same disorder; so that their being detained from landing was every way disagreeable. The wind continued fresh till the 17th, but they then resolved to push in for the harbour, and, with some difficulty, moored the ship along-side of a beach.

Next morning they erected a tent for the sick, several of whom were brought on shore as soon as it was ready for their reception. They likewise built a tent to hold the provisions and stores, which were landed the same day. The boat was now dispatched in search of fish for the refreshment of the sick, but she returned without getting any.

The captain ordered the smith's forge to be set up, and directed the armourer to prepare the necessary iron work for the repair of the vessel. He likewise ordered out the officers stores and water, in order to lighten the ship. Same day Mr. Banks crossed the river to view the country, which was little else than sand-hills. He saw vast flocks of crows and pigeons, of the latter of which he shot several, which were most beautiful birds.

Early in the morning of the 22d, the tide left the ship, and they proceeded to examine the leak, when they found that the rocks had cut through four planks into the timbers, and that three other planks were damaged. In these breaches not a splinter was to be seen, the whole being smooth, as if cut away by an instrument: but the preservation of the vessel was owing to a very singular circumstance. One of the holes was large enough to have sunk her, even with eight pumps constantly at work; but this hole was, in a great measure, stopped up by the fragment of the rock being left sticking in it. They likewise found some pieces of oakum, wool, &c. which had got between the timbers, and stopped many parts of the leak, which had been left open by the stone. Exclusive of the leak, great damage was done to various parts of the ship's bottom.

While the smiths and carpenters were engaged, some of the crew were sent across the river to shoot pigeons for the sick. These people found a stream of fresh water, discovered many Indian houses, and had sight of a mouse-coloured animal, extremely swift, and about the size of a greyhound. Next day many of the crew saw the animal above-mentioned; and one of the seamen declared he had seen the devil, which he described in the following words: "He was as large, says he, as a one gallon keg, and very like it; he had horns and wings, yet he crept so slowly through the grass, that if I had not been *afraid*, I might have touched him." It appeared afterwards, that this poor fellow had seen a bat, which is almost black, and as large as a partridge; and his own apprehensions had furnished his devil with horns.

A mid-

A midshipman saw a wolf exactly resembling those of America. Mr. Gore also saw two straw-coloured animals, of the size of a hare, but shaped like a dog. So much fish was taken, that each man had two pounds and a half; and plenty of greens were gathered, which being boiled with the pease, their fare was deemed excellent.

Cockles were found by the master so large, that one of them was more than sufficient for two men; and likewise plenty of other shell fish, of which he brought a supply to the ship.

Mr. Banks and a party made an excursion up a river, and saw several animals, one of which was judged to be a wolf. At night they made a fire, and took up their quarters on the banks of the river; but the night was rendered extremely disagreeable by the stings of the mosquitoes. At break of day they set out in search of game, and saw four animals, two of which were chased by Mr. Banks's greyhound; but they greatly outstripped him in speed. It was observed of this animal, that he leaped or bounded forward on two legs, instead of running on four.

The tide favouring their return, they lost no time in getting back to the ship. The master, who had been seven leagues at sea, returned soon after, bringing with him three turtle, which he took with a boat-hook, and which, together, weighed near eight hundred pounds.

In the morning, four Indians, in a small canoe, were within sight. They soon came quite alongside the ship; and having received presents, landed where Tupia and a few sailors were on shore. They had each two lances, and a stick with which they throw them. Advancing towards the English,

lish, Tupia persuaded them to lay down their arms, and sit by him, which they readily did.

These men were of the common stature, with very small limbs; their complexion a deep chocolate; their hair black, either lank or curled, but not of the wool kind.

The visit of three of these Indians was renewed the next morning, and they brought with them a fourth, whom they called Yaparico, who appeared to be a person of some consequence. The bone of a bird, about six inches long, was thrust through the gristle of his nose: and, indeed, all the inhabitants of this place had their noses bored, for the reception of such an ornament. These people being quite naked, the captain gave one of them an old shirt, which he bound round his head like a turban, instead of using it to cover any part of his body. The canoe was about ten feet long, and calculated to hold four persons; and when it was in shallow water, they moved it by means of poles.

On the 14th, Mr. Gore shot one of the mouse-coloured animals above-mentioned. The skin of this beast, which is called Kangaroo, is covered with short fur; the head and ears are somewhat like those of a hare: this animal was dressed for dinner, and proved fine eating.

The natives being now become familiar with the ship's crew, one of them was desired to throw his lance, which he did with such dexterity and force, that though it was not above four feet from the ground, at the highest, it penetrated deeply into a tree at the distance of fifty yards. On the 19th, they saw several of the women, who, as well as the men, were quite naked. They were
this

this day visited by ten of the natives, who seemed resolved to have one of the turtle that was on board, which being refused, they expressed the utmost rage and resentment. At length they laid hands on two of the turtles, and drew them to the side of the ship where the canoe lay; but the sailors took them away. They made several similar attempts, but being equally unsuccessful, they leaped suddenly into their canoe, and rowed off. At this instant the captain, with Mr. Banks and five or six seamen, went ashore, where they arrived before the Indians. As soon as the Indians landed, one of them snatched a firebrand from under a pitch-kettle, and running to the windward of what effects were on shore, set fire to the dry grass, which burnt rapidly, damaged the smith's forge, and endangered one of the tents. Appearing determined on farther mischief, a musket, loaded with small shot, was now fired, and one of them being wounded, they ran off.

The natives continuing still in fight, a musket charged with balls was fired near them; upon hearing which they soon got out of sight: but their voices being soon heard in the woods, the captain, with a few of the men, went to meet them. When they were in sight of each other, both parties stopped, except an old Indian, who advanced before the rest a little way, and speaking a few words, retreated to his brethren. The English having seized some of their darts, followed them about a mile, and then sat down; the Indians sitting about a hundred yards from them. The old man again came forward, having in his hand a lance with a point. He stopped and spoke several times; on which the captain made

made signs of friendship. The old Indian now turned to his companions, and having spoken to them, they placed their lances against a tree, and came forward as in friendship; whereupon their darts, which had been taken, were returned, and the whole quarrel seemed to be at an end. When Captain Cook got on board, he saw the woods burning at the distance of two miles from the fire thus kindled by the natives.

The master having been sent to search for a passage to the northward, returned with an account that he could not find any. By the night of the 20th, the fire had extended many miles round them on the hills. The next day one of the seamen, who had strayed from his company, met with four Indians at dinner: he was alarmed at this unexpected meeting, but had prudence enough to conceal his apprehensions, and sitting down by them, gave them his knife, which having all looked at, they returned. He would then have left them; but they chose to detain him, till, by feeling his hands and face, they were convinced he was made of flesh and blood like themselves. They then dismissed him, directing him the nearest way to the ship.

On the 4th of August they put to sea, and at noon came to an anchor, when the captain gave the name of Cape Bedford to the northernmost point of land in sight, and that of Endeavour River to the harbour which they had quitted.

The provisions they obtained, while in this harbour, consisted of turtle, oysters of three different sorts, large cavalhe or scomber, large mullets, some flat fish, a great number of small scombri, and skate or ray-fish; purslain, wild beans, the tops of cocoas, and cabbage palms.

Of

Of quadrupeds there are goats, wolves, and polecats, and a spotted animal of the viverra kind. Dogs are the only tame animals.

During the six following days, they struggled incessantly to sail safely past the shoals and breakers, by which they were every way surrounded.

After a conversation held among the officers, it was their concurrent opinion, that it would be best to leave the coast, and stand out to sea; and in consequence of these sentiments, they sailed on the 13th of August 1770, and got in an open sea, after having been surrounded by dreadful shoals and rocks for near three months. They had now sailed above a thousand miles, during all which run they had been obliged to keep sounding, without the intermission of a single minute; a circumstance which, it is supposed, never happened to any ship but the Endeavour.

Having anchored on the 14th, they steered a westerly course on the following day, to get sight of the land, that a passage between that land and New Guinea might not be missed, if there was any such passage. They stood northward till midnight. When day-light came on, they saw a dreadful surf break at a vast height, within a mile of the ship, towards which the rolling waves carried her with great rapidity. Thus distressed, the boats were sent ahead to tow, and the head of the vessel was brought about, but not till she was within one hundred yards of the rock, between which and her there was nothing left but the chasm, made by the last wave which had washed her side. In the moment they expected instant destruction, a breeze, hardly discernable, aided

aided the boats in getting the vessel in an oblique direction from the rock.

At this time a small opening was seen in the reef, and a young officer being sent to examine it, found that there was smooth water on the other side of the rocks. Animated by the hope of preserving life, they now attempted to pass the opening; but this was impossible; for it having become high water in the interim, the ebb tide rushed through it with amazing impetuosity, carrying the ship to a considerable distance from the reef. When the ebb tide was spent, the tide of flood again drove the vessel very near the rocks; so that their prospect of destruction was renewed, when they discovered another opening, and a light breeze springing up, they entered it, and were driven through it with a rapidity that prevented the ship from striking against either side of the channel.

The name Providential Channel was given to the opening through which the ship had thus escaped the most imminent dangers. A high promontory on the main land, in sight, was denominated Cape Weymouth, and a bay near it Weymouth Bay. This day the boats went out to fish, and met with great success, particularly in catching cockles; some of which were of such an amazing size, as to require the strength of two men to move them.

On the 21st, several islands were discovered, which were called York Isles. In the afternoon they anchored between some islands, and observed, that the channel now began to grow wider. They observed two distant points, between which no land could be seen; so that the hope of hav-
ing

ing; at length, explored a passage into the Indian sea, began to animate every breast.

The captain and his company now ascended a hill, upon one of these islands, from whence they had a view of near forty miles, in which space there was nothing that threatened to oppose their passage; so that the certainty of a channel seemed to be almost ascertained. Previous to their leaving the island, Captain Cook displayed the English colours, and took possession of all the eastern coast of the country, by the name of New South Wales, for his sovereign the King of Great Britain.

They were now advanced to the northern extremity of New Holland, and had the satisfaction of viewing the open sea to the westward. The north-east entrance of the passage is formed by the main land of New Holland, and by a number of islands, which took the name of the Prince of Wales's Islands, and which Captain Cook imagines may reach to New Guinea. To the passage which they had sailed through, Captain Cook gave the name of Endeavour Straights.

New South Wales is a much larger country than any hitherto known, which is not deemed a continent, being larger than all Europe; which is proved by the Endeavour having coasted more than two thousand miles, even if her tract was reduced to a straight line. To the northward the grass is not so rich, nor the trees so high, as in the southern parts; and almost every where, even the largest trees grow at a distance of not less than thirteen yards asunder.

The men are well made, of the middle size, and active in a high degree; but their voices are soft, even to effeminacy. Their colour is the

chocolate; but they were so covered with dirt, as to look almost as black as negroes.

The chief ornament of these people is the bone that is thrust through the nose, which the sailors whimsically termed their spritfail-yard. Some few of them had an ornament of shells hanging across the breast. Besides these ornaments, they painted their bodies and limbs white and red, in stripes of different dimensions; and they had a circle of white round each eye, and spots of it on the face.

Their huts were built with small rods, the two ends of which were fixed into the ground, so as to form the figure of an oven; they are covered with pieces of bark and palm leaves. The door of this building, which is only high enough to sit upright in, is opposite to the fire-place; they sleep with their heels turned up towards their heads, and even in this posture, the hut will not hold more than four people.

They produce fire, and extend the flames in a very singular manner; they reduce one end of a stick into an obtuse point, they place this point upon a piece of dry wood, and turning the upright stick very fast backward and forward between their hands, the fire is soon produced; nor is it increased with less celerity: One of the natives was frequently observed to run along the sea coast, leaving fire in various places. These fires were supposed to be intended for the taking of the kangaroo, as that animal was so very shy of fire, that when forced by the dogs, it would not cross places which had been newly burnt, even when the fire was extinguished.

The points of their lances are sometimes made of fish bones, and sometimes of a hard, heavy wood: they are barbed with other pieces of wood
or

or bone, so that when they have entered any depth into the body, they cannot be drawn out without tearing the flesh in a shocking manner, or leaving splinters behind them.

In the northern parts of this coast, the canoes are formed by hollowing out the trunk of a tree; and it was conjectured, that this operation must have been performed by fire, as the natives did not appear to have any instrument proper for the purpose. The canoes are in length about fourteen feet, and so narrow that they would be frequently overfet, but that they are provided with an outrigger. The natives row them with paddles, using both hands in that employment.

The short intercourse which the English gentlemen had with these people, prevented them from obtaining so perfect a knowledge of the language of the natives as could have been wished. They articulated their words very distinctly; and frequently repeated the word tut, when in company with the English, several times together, which was supposed to be an expression of astonishment and admiration: upon the whole, their language was neither harsh nor inharmonious, as will appear from the subsequent specimen.

Wageegee,	The head.
Meul,	The eyes.
Melea,	The ears.
Bonjoo,	The nose.
Yembe,	The lips.
Mulere,	The teeth.
Unjar,	The tongue.
Tacal,	The chin.
Gippa,	The belly.
Mocoo,	The back.

Aco,	The arms.
Mangal,	The hands.
Peegoorga,	The legs.
Edamal,	The feet.
Bamma,	A man.
Cotta,	A dog.
Poteca,	Fish.
Maianang,	Fire.
Poorai,	Water.
Poapoa,	Earth.
Galan,	The sun.
Boota,	To eat.
Chucula,	To drink.
Marra,	To go.

The 24th of August, 1770, the cable broke near the ring, in the attempt to weigh the anchor; on which another anchor was dropped, which prevented the ship driving. Determined, however, not to lose the anchor, they recovered it the next morning.

Weighing anchor on the 25th of August, they steered north-west, and in a few hours, one of the boats, which was ahead, made the signal for shoal water. The ship instantly brought to, with all her sails standing. It was now found that she had met with another narrow escape, as she was almost encompassed with shoals; and was likewise so situated between them, that she must have struck before the boat's crew had made the signal, if she had been half the length of a cable on either side. In the afternoon she made sail with the ebb tide, and got out of danger before sun-set.

The ship now held a course due north, barely within sight of land, till the 3d of September; and as the water was but just deep enough to na-
vigate

vigate the vessel, many unsuccessful attempts were made to bring her near enough to get on shore: it was therefore determined to land in one of the boats, while the ship kept plying off and on.

In consequence of this resolution, the captain, accompanied by Messrs. Banks and Solander, set out in the pinnace; but when they came within two hundred yards of the shore, the water was so shallow, that they were obliged to leave the boat to the care of two of the sailors, and wade to land. They were no sooner clear of the water, than they saw several prints of human feet on the sand.

Our adventurers were now near a quarter of a mile from the pinnace, when three of the natives ran out of the woods, about one hundred yards beyond them, shouting in the most violent manner. They instantly ran towards our countrymen, the first of the three throwing something out of his hand, which burnt like gunpowder, but made no noise, while the other two threw their lances. The English now fired; when the natives stopped and cast another lance; on which the muskets were loaded with ball, and again fired. The poor Indians now ran off with expedition, having, most probably, been wounded in the unequal conflict.

Captain Cook and his companions, unwilling farther to injure those who could not originally have intended them any harm, retreated hastily to the boat, which they rowed abreast of the natives, who by this time were assembled to the number of about eighty. Their stature was nearly the same with that of the inhabitants of New South Wales, but their colour was not quite so dark. During the survey that was taken of them,

they continued letting off their fires, in a kind of regular platoons; they were discharged by means of a piece of stick, almost like a hollow cane, which being swung sideways, produced fire and smoke exactly like that occasioned by the firing of small arms. The crew on board the ship saw this strange phenomenon, and thought the natives had fire-arms. The lances which had been thrown, soon after the gentlemen landed, were made of reed or bamboo cane, and the points were made of hard wood, barbed in several places; it is imagined, that these lances were discharged by means of a throwing stick, as they flew with great swiftness above sixty yards.

The whole coast of this country is low land, but clothed with a richness of trees and herbage, which exceeds all description.

On the 16th, they had sight of the little island called Rotte; and the same day saw the Island Semau.

At ten o'clock this night, a dull reddish light was seen in the air. This phenomenon, which reached about ten degrees above the horizon, bore a considerable resemblance to the Aurora Borealis, only that the rays of light which it emitted had no tremulous motion. It was surveyed for two hours, during which time its brightness continued undiminished.

As the ship was now clear of all the islands which had been laid down in such maps as were on board, they made sail during the night, and were surprised the next morning, at the sight of an island to the west-south-west, which they flattered themselves was a new discovery. Before noon they had sight of houses, groves of coconut trees, and large flocks of sheep. This was a welcome

welcome fight to people whose health was declining for want of refreshments. The second lieutenant was immediately dispatched in the pinnace, in search of a landing place; and he took with him such things as it was thought might be acceptable to the natives.

Two horsemen were seen from the ship, one of whom had a laced hat on, and was dressed in a coat and waistcoat of the fashion of Europe. These men rode about on shore, regarding the ship with the utmost attention. As soon as the boat reached the shore, some other persons on horseback, and many on foot, hastened to the spot, and it was observed that some cocoa-nuts were put into the boat. A signal being made from the boat, that the ship might anchor in a bay at some distance, which had been pointed out by the natives, she immediately bore away for it.

When the lieutenant came on board, he reported that he could not purchase any cocoa-nuts, as the owner of them was absent, and that what he had brought were given him; in return for which he had presented the natives with some linen.

He saw several of the principal inhabitants of the island, who wore chains of gold about their necks, and were dressed in fine linen.

In the evening, when the ship had entered the bay, to which they had been recommended, an Indian town was seen at a small distance, upon which a jack was hoisted on the fore-topmast-head. Presently afterwards three guns were fired, and Dutch colours were hoisted in the town. The ship, however, held on her way, and came to an anchor at seven in the evening.

The colours being seen hoisted on the beach the next morning, the captain concluded that the
Dutch

Dutch had a settlement on the island; he therefore dispatched the second lieutenant to mention what necessaries they were in want of.

He was conducted to the raja, or king of the island, to whom, by means of a Portuguese interpreter, he made known his business. The raja said, he was ready to supply the ship with the necessary refreshments; but that he could not trade with any other people but the Dutch, without having first obtained their consent; but that he would make application to the Dutch agent, who was the only white man among them. This agent, whose name was Lange, behaved politely to the lieutenant, and told him, he might buy what he thought proper of the inhabitants of the island.

Immediately after, the raja and Mr. Lange intimated their wishes to go on board the ship, and that two of the boat's crew might be left as hostages for their safe return; the lieutenant gratified both these requests, and took them on board just before dinner was served. As Dr. Solander, and another gentlemen on board, were tolerable proficient in Dutch, they acted as interpreters between Mr. Lange and the officers; while some of the sailors, who understood Portuguese, conversed with such of the raja's attendants as spoke that language. The chief part of the dinner was mutton, which the raja having tasted, he begged an English sheep, and the only one which they had left was given him. He then asked for a dog, and Mr. Banks gave him his greyhound; and a spying glass was presented to him, on Mr. Lange's intimating that it would be acceptable.

The visitors now told Captain Cook, that there was great plenty of fowls, hogs, sheep, and buffaloes

faloes on the island, numbers of which should be conveyed to the sea shore on the following day, that he might purchase what was necessary for the recovery of the sick, and for sea stores. This welcome news gave great spirits to the company; and the bottle went so briskly round, that Mr. Lange and his companions became almost intoxicated. They had, however, the resolution to depart, before they were quite drunk.

On the following day, the captain attended by several gentlemen, went on shore, to return the raja's visit. When they landed, they were chagrined to find that the cattle had not been driven down to the beach. They, however, went on to the town.

They were invited to dine with the raja, but he did not partake of the entertainment; as it was not customary here to sit down with their guests. Their dinner consisted of pork and rice, very excellent of their kinds, served up in thirty-six dishes, and three earthen bowls, filled with a kind of broth, in which the pork had been boiled. The spoons were formed of leaves, but were so small, that the hunger of the guests would scarcely allow them patience to use them.

When dinner was ended, the captain invited the raja to drink wine with him; but this he declined, saying, that the man who entertained company should never get drunk with his guests.

When the bottle had circulated some time, Captain Cook began to enquire after the cattle that were promised to be driven down to the beach; when Mr. Lange informed him, that in a letter which he had received from the Governor of Concordia, in Timor, instructions were given, that if the ship should touch at the island, and be in want of provisions, she should be supplied; but

but that he was not to permit her to remain longer than was absolutely necessary. That no presents were to be made to the natives of low rank ; but, he added, that any trifling civilities received from the Indians, might be acknowledged by a present of beads, or any other articles of small value. It is a very probable conjecture that the whole of this story was of Mr. Lange's own manufacture, and solely calculated to draw all the presents of any value into his own pocket.

Soon after this the captain was informed, that some sheep had been driven down to the beach ; but had been conveyed away before the men could get money from the ship to pay for them, and that not a single hog or buffaloe had been produced. Heartily vexed to be thus disappointed of the chief articles which were wanted, the Captain remonstrated with Mr. Lange, who told him, that if he and his officers had gone to the spot, they might have purchased any thing they pleased ; but that the Indians imagined the seamen would impose upon them with counterfeit money.

This story was no more credited than the former ; but not to lose more time, in a case of such urgency, the captain instantly repaired to the beach, but there were no cattle to be bought. During his absence, Lange informed Mr. Banks, that the Indians were offended, that the seamen had not offered gold for what they had to sell, and that no other metal would purchase their commodities ; but Mr. Banks, disdaining to hold farther conversation with a man who had been guilty of such repeated subterfuges, left him abruptly.

On the 20th, the captain and Dr. Solander went again on shore, and while the latter proceeded to the town in search of Lange, the captain staid

staid on the beach, with a view to buy cattle. At this place was an old man, who had been distinguished by the name of prime minister, because he appeared to be invested with considerable authority; and the captain now presented him with a spying-glass, in order to make a friend of him. At present there was nothing brought for sale but a small buffaloe, for which five guineas were demanded. Though the captain knew that this was double its value, yet he bid three guineas, as he was willing to begin dealing at any rate. The person who had it to sell, said, he could not take the money till the raja had been informed what was offered; on which a man was sent to him, who soon came back with a message, that five guineas would be the lowest price: this the captain refused to give; on which a second messenger was dispatched, who staying a long time, Captain Cook was anxiously expecting his return, when he saw Dr. Solander coming towards the beach, escorted by more than a hundred persons, some of whom had lances in their hands, and the rest were armed with muskets. When the doctor arrived at the marketing place, he informed the captain, that Lange had interpreted to him a message from the raja, the substance of which was, that the natives were averse to all traffic with the English, because they would not give above half the real worth of the things which were offered for sale; and that all trading whatever should be prohibited after that day.

The English gentlemen had no doubt, but that the supposed order of the raja was a contrivance of Lange and his confederates, in the way of extortion; and while they were debating how they should act in this critical conjuncture, one of
Lange's

Lange's adherents began to drive away such of the natives as had brought palm-syrup and fowls to sell, and others who were now bringing sheep and buffaloes to the market.

Just at this juncture Captain Cook happening to look at the old man, who had been distinguished by the name of prime minister, imagined that he saw in his features a disapprobation of the present proceedings; and willing to improve the advantage, he grasped the Indian's hand, and gave him an old broad sword. This well-timed present produced all the good effects that could be wished; the prime minister was enraptured at so honourable a mark of distinction, and exerted himself with such success, that the whole business was now speedily accomplished. The natives, eager to supply whatever was wanted, brought their cattle in for sale, and the market was soon stocked. For the first two buffaloes, Captain Cook gave ten guineas; but he afterwards purchased them by way of exchange, giving a musket for each; and at this rate he might have bought any number he thought proper. There seems to be no doubt but that Lange had a profit out of the first two that were sold, and that his reason for having said that the natives would take nothing but gold for their cattle, was, that he might the more easily share in the produce.

Having at length obtained these necessary refreshments, Captain Cook prepared for sailing from this place.

This island is called Savu; it is situated in 10 deg. 35 min. south latitude, and 237 deg. 30 min. west longitude, and has hitherto been very little known, or very imperfectly described. Its length is between twenty and thirty miles; but its breadth

breadth could not be ascertained. At the time the Endeavour lay there it was near the end of the dry season, when it had not rained for almost seven months, nor was there a running stream of fresh water to be seen, and the natives were supplied only by small springs, situated at a distance up the country.

Besides millet and maize, this island produces tobacco, cotton, betle, tamarinds, limes, oranges, mangoes, Guinea-corn, rice, callevances, water-melons, and other tropical fruits. A trifling quantity of cinnamon was seen, and some European herbs.

Several buffaloes were seen on this island, which were almost as large as an ox, yet they did not weigh more than half as much, having lost the greater part of their flesh through the late dry weather; the meat, however, was juicy, and of a delicate flavour. The horns of these animals bend backwards, they have no dewlaps, nor scarce any hair on their skins, and their ears are remarkably large. The other tame animals on the island are dogs, cats, pigeons, fowls, hogs, goats, sheep, asses and horses.

Few of the horses are above twelve hands high, yet they are full of mettle, and pace naturally in an expeditious manner. The sheep are not unlike a goat, and are therefore called cabritos. The sea-coast furnishes the inhabitants with turtle, but not in any great abundance.

The natives of the Island of Savu are rather below the middle stature; their hair is black and straight, and persons of all ranks, as well those that are exposed to the weather, as those that are not, have one general complexion, which is dark brown. The men are well formed and sprightly,

and their features differ much from each other; the women, on the contrary, have all one set of features, and are very short and broad built.

The dress of the men consists of two pieces of cotton cloth, one of which is bound round the middle, and the lower edge of it being drawn pretty tight between the legs, the upper edge is left loose, so as to form a kind of a pocket, in which they carry their knives and other things; the other piece being passed under the former, on the back of the wearer, the ends of it are carried over the shoulders, and tucked into the pocket before. The women draw the upper edge of the piece round the waist tight, while the lower edge, dropping to the knees, makes a kind of a petticoat: the other piece of cloth is fastened across the breast, and under the arms. This cloth, which is manufactured by the natives, is dyed blue while in the yarn; and, as it is of various shades, it looks very beautiful. They have a variety of ornaments.

The houses on the island of Savu are of different lengths, from twenty feet to four hundred, according to the rank of the inhabitant, and are fixed on posts about four or five feet from the ground. The houses are generally divided into three rooms of equal size, the centre room being set apart for the use of the women; and sometimes smaller rooms are inclosed from the sides of the building, the whole of which is thatched with the leaves of the palm tree.

The natives eat of all the tame animals which the island produces, but they prefer the hog to all the rest; next to the hog's flesh they admire that of the horse, to which succeeds the buffaloe, and then the poultry; and they like the flesh of cats

and dogs much better than that of goats and sheep. They seldom eat fish.

The fan-palm is the most remarkable, and most useful tree that grows on the island, its uses being equally great and various. Soon after the buds put forth, the natives cut them, and tying under them little baskets, formed of the leaves of the tree, a liquor drops into them, which has the taste of a light wine, and is the common liquor of all the inhabitants. The leaves of the tree are applied to the various uses of making tobacco-pipes, umbrellas, cups, baskets, and the thatching of houses. The fruit is nearly of the size of a full grown turnip; but the natives are not fond of it.

The island consists of five divisions, each of which has a raja, or chief governor of its own. The inhabitants are also divided into five ranks; the rajas, the land-owners, manufacturers, labourers, and slaves. The land-owners are respected in proportion to the extent of their lands, and the number of their slaves, which last are bought and sold with the estates to which they belong; but when a slave is bought separately, a fat hog is the price of the purchase. Though a man may sell his slave in this manner, or convey him with his lands, yet his power over him extends no farther, for he must not even strike him without the raja's permission.

The natives in general are robust and healthy, and had the appearance of being long-lived. The small-pox has found its way to this island, and is as much dreaded as the pestilence. When this disorder attacks any person, he is carried to some spot at a great distance from any house, where his food is conveyed to him by means of a long stick,

for no one will venture very near the invalid, who is thus left to take his chance of life or death.

The Island of Savu having been visited by the Portuguese almost at their first sailing into this part of the world, they established a settlement upon it; but in a little time they were succeeded by the Dutch, who, though they did not formally possess themselves of the island, sent a number of trading vessels to establish a treaty of commerce with the natives. The principal object of this treaty is, that the rajas should furnish the Dutch, for the consumption of their spice islands, with rice, maize, &c. annually; and they are to return the value in arrack, cutlery wares, linen and silk. In this agreement the rajas stipulated, that a Dutch resident should be constantly on the island, to observe that their part of the contract was fulfilled.

As soon as this was accomplished, they sent Mr. Lange to act as their resident, who had now been on this island ten years; during all which time he had not seen a white person, except those who came annually in the Dutch ship to carry off the rice. He is married to an Indian woman, a native of the Island of Timor, and he lives in the same manner as the inhabitants of Savu, whose language he speaks better than any other; like them too, he sits on the ground and chews betle, and has so perfectly adopted their manners, that he is an absolute Indian, except in dress and complexion.

The morality of these people is of the purest kind. A robbery is scarce ever committed, and a murder is never perpetrated. When any disputes arise between the natives, they instantly submit the point in debate to the decision of the raja,

ja, and rest perfectly satisfied with his determination. No man is permitted to marry more than one wife; yet a violation of the marriage bed, or even the crime of simple fornication is almost wholly unknown among them,

A French ship was wrecked on the coast of Timor, the principal Dutch settlement in this vicinity, about two years before the Endeavour was in these seas. She had been lodged on the rock several days, when the wind tore her to pieces in an instant, and the captain, with the greater number of the seamen, was drowned; but a lieutenant, and about eighty men reached the shore, where they stayed several weeks; but in this interval, death made such havock among them, that not above half their number remained to be sent to their native country.

The Endeavour sailed from the Island of Savu on the 21st of September, and bent her course westward.

On the 28th they steered north-west the whole day, in order to get sight of the land of Java; and on the 30th the captain received from most of the officers and seamen, their respective journals of the voyage, respecting which he advised them to observe the most profound secrecy: and he likewise possessed himself of the log-book. In the night following there was a storm of thunder and lightning, when the land of Java was seen to the eastward by the brightness of the lightning.

Early in the morning of the 2d of October, they were close in with the coast of Java, along which they now steered. As their faithful Indian friend, Tupia, was at this time extremely ill, the captain dispatched a boat to the shore to endeavour to bring him some refreshing fruits, and likewise to

procure grafs for the buffaloes. In a few hours they obtained what they were sent for, and returned to the ship, which proceeded at a slow rate during the night.

On the 3d, in the morning, the Dutch packet-boat was observed sailing after the Endeavour. The master had brought with him two books, in one of which he wrote down the captain's name, and that of the vessel, to be sent to the Governor and Council of the Indies; and in the other book he requested that some of the gentlemen on board would likewise write down the name of the vessel, with that of the captain; whence she came, and to what port she was bound.

Soon after the ship was obliged to come to an anchor, for want of wind. A breeze, however, springing up, she held on her way till the following morning, when she was again obliged to be brought to an anchor, owing to the rapidity of the current. This day and the next, they weighed anchor and brought to several times. On the 8th, they were once more obliged to anchor near a little island, which was not laid down in any of their charts. It is one of those that bear the name of the Milles Isles; and Messrs. Solander and Banks having landed upon it, collected a few plants, and shot a bat which was a yard long, being measured from the extreme points of the wings.

In a little time after the gentlemen came back to the ship, some Malays came along side, in a boat, bringing with them some pumpkins, dried fish, and turtle for sale; one of the turtles, which weighed near one hundred and fifty pounds, they sold for a dollar.

The ship now made but slow way till night, when the land breeze springing up, they sailed to the east-south-

south-east, and on the following day, they came to an anchor in the road of Batavia.

The Endeavour had no sooner anchored, than a ship was observed, with a broad pendant flying, from which a boat was dispatched to demand the name of the vessel, with that of the commander. To these enquiries Captain Cook gave such answers as he thought proper, and the officer, who commanded the boat, departed. This gentleman and the crew that attended him, were so worn down by the unhealthiness of the climate, that they appeared but as the shadows of men; which the captain deemed a sad presage of the havock which death would soon make among his crew; yet at present there was not one invalid on board, except the Indian Tupia. The English tars, whose want of foresight and defiance of danger is notorious, seemed not to entertain the least idea that even sickness would attack a set of men so hardened as they were by different climates; but alas! they had very little idea of the fatal contagion which impregnates the air of Batavia.

The officers and seamen concurring in opinion, that the ship could not safely put to sea again in her present condition, the captain resolved to solicit permission to heave her down; but as he had learnt that this must be done in writing, he drew up a petition, and had it translated into Dutch.

On the 10th of October, 1770, the captain and the rest of the gentlemen went on shore, and applied to the only English gentleman then resident at Batavia; this gentleman, whose name was Leith, received his countrymen in the politest manner, and entertained them at dinner with great hospitality.

In the afternoon Captain Cook attended the governor general, who received him politely, and told

told him, to wait on the council the next morning, when his petition should be laid before them, and every thing he solicited would be readily granted.

Late in the evening of this day, there happened a most terrible storm of thunder and lightning, accompanied with very heavy rain, by which a Dutch East Indiaman was greatly damaged both in her masts and rigging. The Endeavour, though near this Dutch ship, escaped without damage, owing, in Captain Cook's opinion, to an electrical chain, which conducted the lightning over the side of the vessel. A sentinel on board the Endeavour, who was charging his musket at the time of the storm, had it shaken out of his hand, and the ram-rod was broken in pieces: the electrical chain looked like a stream of fire, and the ship sustained a very violent shock.

Next day Captain Cook waited on the gentlemen of the council, who informed him, that all his requests should be complied with. In the interim, the other gentlemen made a contract with the master of a public hotel, to furnish them and their friends with as much tea, coffee, punch, and tobacco, as they might have occasion for, and to keep them a separate table for nine shillings a day, English money; they were likewise to pay for every servant that attended them, fifteen pence a day. It was soon discovered, that they had been vilely imposed on; for these charges were above twice as much as would have been demanded at a private house. They appeared to live elegantly, but at the same time were but ill supplied.

The gentlemen having found fault with their fare, were afterwards supplied in a better manner;

ner ; but Mr. Banks, not approving the conduct of the master of the hotel, he hired lodgings for himself and his attendants at the adjoining house, for which he agreed to pay five and forty thillings a month.

Their Indian friend, Tupia, had been till this time on board very dangerously ill, yet persisted to refuse every medicine that was offered him : Mr. Banks now sent for him to his house, in the hope that he might recover his health. While he was in the ship, and even after he was put into the boat, he was indisposed, and low spirited in the utmost degree ; but the moment he came into the town, his whole frame appeared as if re-animated. The houses, the carriages, the people, and many other objects, were totally new to him ; and astonishment took possession of his features, at sights so wonderful : but if Tupia was astonished at the scene, his boy, Tayota, was perfectly enraptured, dancing along the streets in an ecstasy of joy, and examining the several objects as they presented themselves, with the most earnest inquisitiveness and curiosity.

Of all the circumstances which engaged the attention of Tupia, nothing struck him so much as the variety of dresses worn by the inhabitants of Batavia : he enquired the reason of what appeared so extraordinary in his eyes, and being informed that the people were of a variety of nations, and that all were dressed according to the mode of their own country, he requested permission to follow the fashion ; this request being readily complied with, a person was dispatched to the ship for some South Sea cloth, with which he soon clothed himself in the dress of Otahiete.

Captain

Captain Cook now applied to several persons to advance him money sufficient to defray the expence of repairing the ship; but not one could be found in the whole town who had the requisite sum in his possession, or, if he had, was willing to advance it; he therefore made application to the governor, who issued his orders, that he should be supplied out of the treasury of the Dutch East India Company.

After little more than a week spent at Batavia, the ill effects of the climate began to be severely felt. Dr. Solander and Mr. Banks were indisposed with fevers; Mr. Banks's two servants were exceedingly ill; the Indian boy, Tayota, had an inflammation on his lungs; and Tupia was so bad, that his life was despaired of. Their indisposition was attributed partly to the heat of the climate, and partly to the swampy situation of the town, and the stench of the dirty canals with which it abounds.

By the 26th of the month, very few of the crew were well enough to do duty; and on this day a tent was erected for their reception. Tupia now requested to be conveyed to the ship, in the hope of breathing a purer air than in the town, but his request could not be granted, as she was unrigged, and preparations were making to lay her down, in order that she might undergo a thorough repair. On the 28th, however, Mr. Banks attended Tupia to Cooper's island, and a tent was pitched for him, in such a situation, where he was alternately refreshed by the land and sea breezes; and the poor creature was extremely thankful that he was so agreeably lodged.

On the 5th of November died Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, whose loss was the more severely felt,

felt, as he was a man of skill in his profession, and fell a sacrifice to the pestiferous air of the country, at a time when his abilities were most wanted.

Death now advanced with hasty strides among our adventurous countrymen, who were equally unable to resist his power, or shun his embraces. Several Malay servants were engaged to wait on those who were ill; but these people were so remiss in their duty, that it was no uncommon thing for the sick man to leave his bed in search of his attendant. The Indian boy, Tayota, paid the debt of nature on the 9th of this month, and Tupia, whose tender affection for the youth can be equalled only by that of a parent for a favourite child, was so shocked at the loss, that it was evident he could not long survive him.

By this time the ship's bottom having been carefully surveyed, our countrymen had ample reason to be grateful to that Providence, by which they had been preserved during a passage of several hundred miles, through the most dangerous seas on the face of the globe; for the sheathing in several places was torn from the vessel, the false keel was in a great measure gone, the main keel was damaged in many parts, several of the planks had received great injury, and a part of three of them was thinner than the sole of a shoe.

Messrs. Solander and Banks were now so worn down by their disorders, that the physician, who attended them, recommended the country air, as the only thing that could possibly restore them to the wishes of their friends. In consequence of this advice, they hired a country house of the master of the hotel, who engaged to supply them with slaves, and to furnish their table; but as they had sufficiently experienced the worthlessness of these

these slaves, they bought two Malay women, who soon became excellent nurses, from that tenderness of nature which does so much honour to the sex. While these gentlemen were taking measures for the recovery of their health, poor Tupia fell a victim to the ravages of his disorder, and to his grief for the deceased Tayota: they were both buried in the island of Edam.

By this time not above ten men out of the whole ship's crew were able to do duty, and these were employed in getting the water and stores aboard, and in putting up the rigging.

Captain Cook was now taken ill, and Mr. Sporing and a sailor, who attended Messrs. Banks and Solander at their country-house, were attacked with intermitting fevers; but those two gentlemen grew something better, though their recovery was very slow. Their house was situated on the borders of a rivulet, which, of course, assisted the circulation of the air, and it was likewise open to the sea breeze.

In the night of the 25th, there fell such a shower of rain, for the space of four hours, as even our voyagers had scarce ever remembered. The water poured through every part of Mr. Banks's house; and the lower apartments admitted a stream sufficient to have turned a mill. As this gentleman was now greatly restored in health, he went to Batavia the following day, and was surprised to see that the inhabitants had hung out their bedding to dry. The westerly monsoon set in about the 26th of this month; it blows in the day time from the north, or north-west, and from the south-west during the night. Previous to this, there had been violent thunder, and hard showers of rain for several nights.

The

The mosquitoes and gnats, whose company had been sufficiently disagreeable in the dry weather, now began to swarm in immense numbers, rising from the puddles of water like bees from a hive. They were extremely troublesome during the night, but the pain arising from their stinging, though very severe, seldom lasted more than half an hour; and in the day time they seldom made their attacks. The frogs kept a perpetual croaking in the ditches; a certain sign that the wet season was commenced, and that daily rain might be expected.

The ship being repaired, the sick people being received on board her, and the greater part of her water and stores taken in, she sailed from Onrust on the 8th of December, and anchored in the road of Batavia.

On the 24th Captain Cook took leave of the governor, and some other gentlemen, who had distinguished themselves by the civilities they shewed him. Immediately after, he went on board, attended by Mr. Banks and the other gentlemen who had hitherto lived in the town, and they got under sail the next morning. Since the arrival of the ship in Batavia road, every person belonging to her had been ill, except the sailmaker, who was more than seventy years old; yet this man got drunk every day while they remained there. The Endeavour buried seven of her people at Batavia, viz. Tupia and his boy, three of the sailors, the servant of Mr. Green, the astronomer, and the surgeon; and at the time of the vessel's sailing, forty of the crew were sick, and the rest so enfeebled by their late illness, as to be scarcely able to do their duty.

The town of Batavia is situated in 6 deg. 10 min. south latitude, and 106 deg. 50 min. east longitude, from the meridian of Greenwich. It is built on the bank of a large bay, something more than twenty miles from the Strait of Sunda, on the north side of the island of Java, in low boggy ground. Several small rivers, which rise forty miles up the country in the mountains of Blaeuwen Berg, discharge themselves into the sea at this place, having first intersected the town in different directions. There are wide canals of nearly stagnated water in almost every street, and as the banks of these canals are planted with rows of trees, the effect is very agreeable; but these trees and canals combine to render the air pestilential.

They were informed, that it was a very uncommon thing for fifty soldiers, out of a hundred brought from Europe, to be alive at the expiration of the first year, and that of the fifty who might happen to be alive, not ten of those would be in sound health, and, probably, not less than half of them in the hospital. One would imagine that no man of common sense would be tempted to reside at Batavia, for any consideration of interest whatever; yet such is the insatiable thirst of gold, that men will voluntarily risk the loss of life to obtain it, and even ensure the loss of that health, without which the most splendid fortune cannot be enjoyed.

Any number of ships may anchor in the harbour of Batavia, the ground of which is so excellent, that the anchor will never quit its hold. This harbour is sometimes dangerous for boats, when the sea breeze blows fresh; but, upon the whole,

whole, it is deemed the best and most commodious in all India.

The environs of Batavia have a very pleasing appearance, and would, in almost any other country, be an enviable situation. Gardens and houses occupy the country for several miles; but the gardens are so covered with trees, that the advantage of the land having been cleared of the wood that originally covered it, is almost wholly lost; while these gardens, and the fields adjacent to them are furrounded by ditches which yield not the most fragrant smell, and the bogs and morasses in the adjacent fields are still more offensive.

At near forty miles from the town, the land rises into hills, and the air is purified in a great degree; to this distance the invalids are sent by their physicians, when every other prospect of their recovery has failed, and the experiment succeeds in almost every instance, for the sick are soon restored to health; but they no sooner return to the town than their former disorders visit them.

The choicest fruits are astonishingly plentiful and cheap; and it is wonderful to see what quantities of them are eaten at Batavia. Two large markets are held weekly, at distant places, for the accommodation of persons residing in different parts of the country. At these markets it is common to see "fifty or sixty cart-loads of the finest pine-apples carelessly tumbled together."

The Batavians, and the natives of other parts of the island of Java, strew an immense number of flowers about their houses, and are almost always burning aromatic woods and gums, which,

which, it is imagined, is done by way of purifying the air.

Formerly the island of Java produced no kind of spices but pepper, and the quantity which the Dutch bring annually from thence is very considerable; but the quantity that is made use of in the country is very small, as the people there give the preference to Cayan pepper. The inhabitants are extremely fond of nutmegs and cloves; but they bear too high a price to be much in use, as the trees which produce them are all become Dutch property.

The island of Java produces goats, sheep, hogs, buffaloes, and horses. The horse, which is said to have been met with here when the country was originally discovered, is a small, but nimble animal, being seldom above thirteen hands high. The horned cattle of this country are different from those of Europe; the flesh is extremely lean, but of a very fine grain. Both the Chinese and the natives of the island feed on the buffalo; but the Dutch will neither taste the flesh nor the milk, from a ridiculous idea, that they are productive of fevers. The sheep are tough and ill-tasted; their skins are hairy, and they have pendulous ears.

The hogs, especially those of the Chinese breed, are exquisitely fine food, but so extravagantly fat, that the lean is always sold separately.

The quantity of fish taken here is astonishingly great, and all the kinds of them are fine food, except a few which are very scarce; yet such is the false pride of the inhabitants, that these few sorts are sold at very high rates, while those that are good are sold for a mere trifle, nor are they eaten but by the slaves. A gentleman with whom

whom Captain Cook dined told him, he could have bought a finer dish of fish for a shilling, than what he had given ten for; but that he should have been the ridicule of all the politer people, if he had gone to so good a market.

Mr. Banks shot a lizard five feet in length, which was extremely well tasted: our adventurers were informed, that some of these animals had been seen, which were full as thick as the thigh of a man.

Captain Cook was informed that, at the time he was there, the whole place could not furnish fifty women who were natives of Europe, yet the town abounded with white women who were descended from Europeans, who had settled there at different times, all the men having paid the debt of nature; for so it is, that the climate of Batavia destroys the men much faster than the women.

The Indian inhabitants of Batavia, and the country in its neighbourhood, are not native Javeneſe, but are either born on the ſeveral iſlands whence the Dutch bring their ſlaves, or the offſpring of ſuch as have been born on thoſe iſlands: and theſe having been made free, either in their own perſons, or in the perſons of their anceſtors, enjoy all the privileges of freemen. They receive the general appellation of Oranſlam, which implies, “Believers of the true faith.”

The various other Indian inhabitants of this country attach themſelves each to the original cuſtoms of that in which either themſelves or their anceſtors were born; keeping themſelves apart from thoſe of other nations, and practiſing both the virtues and vices peculiar to their own countries.

The hair of the people, which is black, without a single exception, grows in great abundance. The women fasten it to the crown of the head with a bodkin, having first twisted it into a circle, round which circle they place an elegant wreath of flowers; so that the whole head-dress has the most beautiful appearance that imagination can form an idea of.

It is the universal custom, both with the men and women, to bathe in a river once a day, and sometimes oftener, which not only promotes health, but prevents that contraction of filth, which would be otherwise unavoidable in so hot a climate.

Almost every person has read or heard of the Mohawks; and these people are so denominated, from a corruption of the word Amock, which will be well explained by the following story and observations. To run a muck, is to get drunk with opium, and then seizing some offensive weapon, to sally forth from the house, kill the person or persons supposed to have injured the Amock, and any other person that attempts to impede his passage, till he himself is taken prisoner, or killed on the spot.—While Captain Cook was at Batavia, a person whose circumstances in life were independent, becoming jealous of his brother, intoxicated himself with opium, and then murdered his brother, and two other men who endeavoured to seize him. This man, contrary to the usual custom, did not leave his own house, but made his resistance from within it; yet he had taken such a quantity of the opium, that he was totally delirious.

During the time that Captain Cook was at Batavia, several instances of the like kind occurred; and

and he was informed by an officer, whose duty it was to take such offenders into custody, that hardly a week passed in the year in which he was not obliged to exercise his authority. When he takes one of them alive, he is amply rewarded; but this is not often the case, as they are so desperate as not to be easily apprehended: when they are killed in the attempt to take them, the officer has only the customary gratification. Those who are taken alive are broken on the wheel, as near as possible to the place where the first murder was perpetrated; and, as they are seldom apprehended without being previously wounded, the time of their execution is sooner or later, according to the opinions of the physicians, whether the wounds are, or are not, mortal.

These people have some singular superstitions in regard to dreams; but the following is the most extraordinary of any in the circle of human weaknesses. They are possessed with an idea, that when one of their wives is brought to bed, a crocodile is born, as a brother to the infant; and they imagine that the midwife conveys the young crocodile to an adjacent river, into which she puts it, with the utmost care and tenderness. Those who suppose themselves honoured by the birth of this new relation, fail not to put food in the river for his subsistence; but this is the peculiar duty of the twin-brother, who performs this service regularly, at fixed periods, during the whole course of his life; firmly believing at the same time, that sickness or death would be the consequence of an omission on his part.

In the islands of Boutou and Celebes the natives keep crocodiles in their families; and it is conjectured, that the strange idea of the twin crocodile

crocodile was first conceived in one of those islands, it extends, however, to Java and Sumatra westward, and among the islands to the eastward as far as Ceram and Timor. It is a matter of perfect astonishment, how even the most ignorant and credulous of the human race, should firmly believe an utter impossibility to occur daily; yet it is certain, that not one of the Indians whom Captain Cook questioned on the subject, entertained the least doubt about the matter.—The crocodiles supposed to be thus born are distinguished by the name of Sudaras; and our readers cannot fail of being entertained with the following story respecting them, which Mr. Banks heard from a young woman who was born at Bencoolen; and having lived among the English at that place, had learnt to speak as much of our language as was sufficient to make her story intelligible.

She said that, when her father was on his death-bed, he laid the strongest injunctions on her to feed a crocodile that was his Sudara; that he told her the name by which he might be called up, and the particular part of the river where she would find him. Soon after the death of her father, she hastened to the river, and calling Radja Pouti (which signifies white king) the Sudara crocodile made his appearance, and she fed him with her own hands. She described him as being more beautiful than crocodiles are in general, for he had a red nose, and spots on his body; his ears were adorned with rings, and his feet with ornaments of gold. This story will appear the more extravagantly ridiculous, when it is recollected that crocodiles have not any ears.

A man

A man whose mother was a native of the island of Java, and whose father was a Dutchman, was engaged in the service of Mr. Banks during his residence at Batavia. This man told his master that several Dutchmen, and many Javanese, as well as himself, had seen such a crocodile as was described by the girl who told the preceding story, and that like her's, its feet were adorned with gold. On Mr. Banks's remarking the absurdity of these tales, and saying that crocodiles had not ears, he replied, that the Sudaras differed considerably from other crocodiles; that they had ears, though he acknowledged they were small, that their tongues filled their mouths, and that on each foot they had five toes.

The Chinese inhabitants of Batavia, are like those of their own country, some of the most industrious people on the face of the earth. They act as embroiderers, dyers of cotton, taylor, carpenters, joiners, smiths, and makers of slippers; some of them are shop-keepers, and deal largely in the manufactures of Europe and China. Their knavery is proverbial.

The lawyers of Batavia are partial in their administration of justice to a very reprehensible degree. When an Indian has committed any crime deemed worthy of death, he is impaled, hanged, or broken on the wheel, without ceremony. On the contrary, if a Christian is capitally convicted, execution very seldom follows the sentence: and what is more extraordinary, no pains are taken to apprehend the offender, till time enough has been allowed him to run away, if he thinks proper.

We shall now proceed to a recital of the incidents which occurred during their passage from Batavia to the Cape of Good Hope.

Early

Early in the morning of the 27th of December 1770, the Endeavour left the road of Batavia, and after several delays occasioned by the wind being contrary, she stood over for the shore of Java, on the 1st of January 1771. As many of the ship's crew, who had been very ill while at Batavia, were now become much worse, the vessel was brought to an anchor in the afternoon of the 5th near Princes Island, with a view to get some necessary refreshments, and likewise to take in wood and water.

Messrs. Solander and Banks now went ashore with the captain, and they were no sooner landed, than some of the natives conducted them to the king of the island, with whom they endeavoured to make a bargain for some turtle, but the price could not be agreed on. As our adventurers had no doubt but that they should purchase on their own terms the following day, they left the Indians, and proceeded in search of a proper place to fill water, which was found.

Next day they purchased, at very moderate prices, as many turtle as they had occasion for, and the whole ship's company fed on this delicious fish. The king was at this time at a house situated in a rice field, where Mr. Banks waited on him, and found him cooking his own victuals.

On the 12th, while the captain was on shore giving orders to the people who were cutting wood and filling water, he was told, that one of the natives had stolen an axe. The thief was unknown; but the captain, resolving not to pave the way for future depredations of this kind, by taking no notice of the first offence, he immediately applied to the king; and in consequence of this application, the axe was brought down to the
watering

watering place next day. The Indian, who brought it back, said it was left at his house in the night; but it was suspected that himself was the thief.

After a stay of ten days at Princes Island, during which they purchased vegetables of various kinds, fowls, deer, and turtle, the anchor was weighed, and the vessel once more put to sea.

The island, which lies in the western mouth of the Strait of Sunda, is small and woody, and has been cleared only in very few places. Our India ships used to touch at Princes Island to take in water, but they have omitted this practice for some years, on account, as it is said, of the water being brackish; yet Captain Cook says it is exceeding good, if filled towards the head of the brook.

The houses are constructed in the form of an oblong square: they are built on pillars four feet above the ground, and well thatched with palm-leaves, as a defence from the sun and rain: the flooring is of bamboo canes, placed at a distance from each other, to admit the air: these houses consist of four rooms, one of which is destined for the reception of visitants, the children sleep in a second, and the two others are allotted, the one for the purpose of cookery, and the other for the bed-chamber of the owner and his wife. The residence of the king of the island, and that of another person of great authority, has boards on the sides, while the houses of all the inferior people have walls made of the bamboo cane, slit into small sticks, and wrought across the beams of the building, in the manner of a hurdle. The king of the island is subject to the Sultan of Bantam.

Captain Cook represents the natives as very honest in their dealings, with the single exception, of demanding more than double the sum they intended to sell for.

At the time the Endeavour left Princes Island, her crew began to feel, in all its force, the ill effects of the putrid air of Batavia; and soon afterwards the ship was a mere hospital, filled with unhappy wretches, sinking under the rage of fevers and dysenteries. In the space of six weeks twenty-three persons died, exclusive of the seven which had been buried at Batavia; these were nine seamen, the corporal of the marines, the ship's cook, two of the carpenter's crew, the carpenter and his mate, a midshipman, the old sailmaker, who was in perfect health when all the rest were ill at Batavia, and his mate, the boatswain, Mr. Monkhouse, a midshipman, Mr. Sporing, who accompanied Mr. Banks, Mr. Parkinson, draftsman to that gentleman, and Mr. Green the astronomer.

After a passage in which nothing remarkable occurred, the ship was brought to an anchor off the Cape of Good Hope, on the 15th of March 1771. The captain repaired instantly to the governor, who said that such refreshments as the country supplied, should be cheerfully granted him; on which a house was hired for the sick.

At the time the Endeavour lay at anchor here, an English East Indiaman sailed for the port of London, who had buried above thirty of her crew while she was in India; and at that time had many others severely afflicted with the scurvy; so that the sufferings of the crew of the Endeavour, considering her long absence from England,

land, is a circumstance not at all to be wondered at.

Cape Town consists of near a thousand brick houses, the outsides of which being generally plaistered, they have a very pleasing appearance. There is a canal in the main street, with two rows of oak-trees on its borders, which are in a more flourishing state than the other trees of this country; the streets, which cross each other at right angles, are very spacious and handsome. The inhabitants are chiefly Dutch, or of Dutch extraction; the women are beautiful in a high degree, and possess those blooming countenances which denote the most perfect health; they are most of them mothers of many children, and Captain Cook says, they are the best wives in the world.

The air of the Cape of Good Hope is so pure and salubrious, that a sick person, who goes thither from Europe, whatever be his disorder, almost always recovers his health in a little time; but those who bring diseases with them from the East Indies, have not an equal chance.

The Constantia wine which is made here is excellent, but the genuine sort is made only at one particular vineyard a few miles from the town. The gardens produce many sorts of European and Indian fruits, and almost all the common kinds of vegetables. The sheep of this country have tails of a very extraordinary size, many of which weigh upwards of a dozen pounds; the meat of this animal, as well as of the ox, is very fine food; the wool of the sheep is rather of the hairy kind, and the horns of the black cattle spread much wider than those of England,

while the beast himself is handfomer and lighter made.

When a stranger arrives at the Cape, it is customary for him to board in a private house, and he pays from two shillings to a crown a day, according to the accommodations he expects. Horses are here let to hire at six shillings a day, and coaches at one pound four.

On the 14th of April 1771, the anchor of the Endeavour was weighed, and she once more put to sea. On Monday, May-day, they came to an anchor off the island of St. Helena; and as they proposed to remain three days, Mr. Banks employed the interval in surveying every object that was thought worthy of notice.

The island of St. Helena rises out of the immense Atlantic Ocean, is about eighteen hundred miles from the coast of America, and twelve hundred from that of Africa. It has the appearance of a huge mountain, the foundation of which is probably at the centre of the globe. It had formerly volcanoes in several parts of it; as is evident from the appearance of the earth and stones in many places; and it looks like a cluster of rocks, bounded by precipices of immense height. As a vessel sails along the coast, the cliffs perpend over her head, so as to threaten her instant destruction, and nothing in nature can be conceived more awful than their appearance.

Close to the sea-side stands the town, which had formerly a church of very indifferent architecture, but it is now little better than a heap of ruins, nor is the market-house in a much better condition: most of the houses are also constructed in a vile taste.

As this island is the property of the English East India Company, the inhabitants are not suffered to carry on any trade for their own emolument, but get their livelihood by selling the productions of the island to the crews of the vessels which anchor there for a supply of refreshments.

The only white inhabitants of the island are subjects of the King of Great Britain; these employ slaves, who transport goods of all kinds from place to place on their heads; and we are sorry to say, that the inhumanity of our countrymen to these slaves, is a disgrace to those who profess the Christian faith. There are a small number of horses at St. Helena, but they are never employed in draught, there being no such thing as a waggon or cart on the island, though in many places the land is not so steep, but that such carriages might easily be drawn.

On the 4th of May, the Endeavour sailed from the road of St. Helena, together with the Portland man of war, and several sail of Indiamen. They kept company with the man of war and Indiamen till the 10th. But Captain Cook, observing that they were out-sailed by all the other ships, and consequently imagining that some of them would reach England before him, made signals to speak with the Portland; when the captain of that vessel came on board, and received from Captain Cook a letter to the lords of the admiralty, together with a box, in which were deposited the journals of many of the officers, and the ship's log-books.

On the 23d, they lost sight of all the ships they sailed in company with from St. Helena; and in the afternoon of the same day, Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, died of a consumption, with

which he had been afflicted during the whole voyage.

No single occurrence worth recording happened from this time, till the ship came to an anchor in the Downs, which was on the 12th of June following, after an absence of two years, nine months, and fourteen days.

Whoever has carefully read, and duly considered, the wonderful protection of this ship, in cases of danger the most imminent and astonishing, particularly when encircled in the wide ocean with rocks of coral, her sheathing beaten off, her false keel floating by her side, and a hole in her bottom, will naturally turn his thoughts with adoration to that Divine Being, whose mercies are over all his works.

The grand object of Captain Cook's expedition will be found detailed in the sixty-first volume of the Philosophical Transactions. But independent of this, no navigator, since the time of Columbus, had made more important original discoveries. Exclusive of several islands, never visited before, he ascertained New Zealand to be composed of two islands, by sailing between them; and he explored an immense track of the coast of New Holland, till then little known by Europeans.

These are the appropriate merits of Captain Cook's first voyage; and though the sequel will shew that he improved on himself, he still remains unrivalled for what he had already done.

SECOND VOYAGE
OF
CAPTAIN JAMES COOK,
TO EXPLORE THE
SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE.

OUR adventurous and persevering navigator did not long enjoy repose. Government soon projected another expedition to complete the discovery of the Southern Hemisphere, which for ages had been considered, by some of the ablest geographers, as containing another continent.

To ascertain this fact, two ships were fitted out; and that nothing might be omitted, which could facilitate the enterprize, they were furnished with every requisite which a liberal attention to the health and comfort of the crews could devise. These vessels were built on a particular construction, and were purchased of Captain Hammond of Hull. The largest was named the *Resolution*, of four hundred and sixty-two tons burthen, Captain James Cook commander; the other was named the *Adventure*, of three hundred and thirty-six tons, Captain Tobias Furneaux, who had been promoted from the rank of lieutenant.

The Resolution had one hundred and twelve persons on board, officers included, and the Adventure eighty-one. Mr. Forster and his son, both eminent naturalists, and Mr. Wales, now mathematical master of Christ's Hospital, accompanied them.

On the 13th of June 1772, both the ships sailed from Plymouth Sound, and, on the evening of the 29th, anchored in Funchiale Road, in the Island of Madeira. At the captain's and Mr. Forster's landing, they were received by a gentleman from the vice-consul, who conducted them to the house of Mr. Loughnans, the most considerable English merchant in the place. This gentleman not only obtained leave for Mr. Forster to search the island for plants, but procured them every other thing they wanted, and insisted on their accommodating themselves at his house during their stay.

During their stay here, the crews of both ships were supplied with fresh beef and onions; and a quantity of the latter was distributed amongst them for sea-store.

Having got on board a supply of water, wine, and other necessaries, they left Madeira on the 1st of August, and steered southward.

Captain Cook now made three puncheons of beer, of the inspissated juice of malt. The proportion was about ten of water to one of juice. They stopped at St. Jago for a supply of water, on the 10th, and having completed this business, and got on board a supply of refreshments, such as hogs, goats, fowls, and fruit, they put to sea, and proceeded on their voyage.

Port Praya, where they anchored, is a small bay, situated about the middle of the south side
1 of

of the Island of St. Jago. The water is tolerable, but scarce ; and bad getting off, on account of a great surf on the beach.

On the 19th, one of the carpenter's mates fell overboard, and was drowned. He was over the side, sitting on one of the scuttles ; whence, it was supposed, he had fallen ; for he was not seen till the very instant he sunk under the ship's stern, when all endeavours to save him were too late. This loss was sensibly felt during the voyage, as he was a sober man and a good workman.

With variable winds they advanced but slowly, and without meeting with any thing remarkable till the 23d, when they saw a seal, or as some thought, a sea-lion, which probably might be an inhabitant of one of the Islands of Tristian de Cunha, being now nearly in their latitude.

At two in the afternoon, on the 29th, they made the land of the Cape of Good Hope. The Table Mountain, which is over the Cape Town, distance twelve or fourteen leagues, was a good deal obscured by clouds, otherwise it might, from its height, have been seen at a much greater distance. Between eight and nine o'clock this evening, the whole sea, within the compass of their sight, became at once, as it were, illuminated, or, what the seamen call, all on fire. This appearance of the sea, in some degree, is very common ; but the cause has been differently accounted for, though generally supposed to arise from marine insects.

They had no sooner anchored in Table Bay, than they were visited by the captain of the port and Mr. Brandt. This last gentleman brought off such things as could not fail of being acceptable to persons coming from sea. The master
attendant

attendant also visited them, according to custom, to take an account of the ships; to enquire into the health of the crews; and, in particular, if the small-pox was on board; a thing they dread above all others at the Cape.

Captain Cook waited upon the governor, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and the two Mr. Forsters. He received them with great politeness, and promised every assistance the place could afford.

After having visited the governor and some other principal persons of the place, they fixed at Mr. Brandt's, the usual residence of most officers belonging to English ships. This gentleman spares neither trouble nor expence to make his house agreeable to those who favour him with their company, and to accommodate them with every thing they want.

It was the 18th of November before they had got ready to put to sea. During this stay the crews of both ships were served every day with fresh beef or mutton, new-baked bread, and as much greens as they could eat. The ships were caulked and painted; and, in every respect, put in as good a condition as when they left England.

Mr. Forster, whose whole time was taken up in the pursuit of natural history and botany, met with a Swedish gentleman, one Mr. Sparrman, who had studied under Dr. Linnæus. He, by Captain Cook's consent, embarked as an assistant to Mr. Forster, who bore his expences on board, and allowed him a yearly stipend besides.

In the afternoon of the 22d they weighed, and on the 25th had abundance of albatrosses about them, several of which were caught with hook and line; and were very well relished by many of
the

the people, notwithstanding they were at this time served with fresh mutton. Judging that they should soon come into cold weather, the captain ordered the men to be supplied with the dresses which had been furnished by the admiralty.

A violent gale, attended with rain and hail, blew at times with such violence, that they could carry no sails; by which means they were driven far to the eastward of their intended course, and no hopes were left of reaching Cape Circumcision. But the greatest misfortune that attended them, was the loss of great part of their live stock, which they had brought from the Cape. There was now a sudden transition from warm, mild weather, to extreme cold and wet, which made every man in the ship feel its effects; for, by this time, the mercury in the thermometer had fallen to thirty-eight, whereas, at the Cape it was generally at sixty-seven and upwards. The night proved clear and serene, and the only one that was so since they set sail; and the next morning the rising sun gave such flattering hopes of a fine day, that they were induced to let all the reefs out of the top-sails. Their hopes, however, soon vanished; for by one o'clock, the wind blew almost a hurricane.

On the 10th, the weather being hazy, they did not see an island of ice which they were steering directly for, till they were less than a mile from it. It appeared to be about fifty feet high, and half a mile in circuit. It was flat at the top, and its sides rose in a perpendicular direction, against which the sea broke exceedingly high.

As the weather continued hazy, with fleet and snow, they were obliged to proceed with great caution on account of the ice islands. Six of these they passed in one day; some of them near
two

two miles in circuit, and sixty feet high. And yet, such was the force and height of these waves, that the sea broke quite over them. Captain Cook says, "This exhibited a view, which, for a few moments, was pleasing to the eye; but when we reflected on the danger, the mind was filled with horror. For were a ship to get against the weather side of one of these islands, when the sea runs high, she would be dashed to pieces in a moment."

At eight o'clock, on the 14th, they brought to under a point of the ice, where they had smooth water: and the two captains fixed on rendezvous, in case of separation, and some other matters for the better keeping company.

Next day, they had a small gale, thick foggy weather, with much snow; their sails and rigging were all hung with icicles. The fog was so thick, at times, that they could not see the length of the ship; and they had much difficulty to avoid the many islands of ice that surrounded them.

On the 17th, they saw many whales, one seal, penguins, some white birds. They found the skirts of the loose ice to be more broken than usual; and it extended some distance beyond the main field, inasmuch that they sailed amongst it the most part of the day; and the high ice islands without were innumerable. The weather was sensibly colder than the thermometer seemed to point out, inasmuch that the whole crew complained. In order to enable them to support this the better, the sleeves of their jackets were lengthened with baize; and a cap was made for each man of the same stuff, together with canvases; which proved of great service to them.

After

After proceeding some days through fields and islands of ice, on the 29th, they came to a resolution, to run as far west as the meridian of Cape Circumcision, provided they met with no impediment, as the distance was not more than eighty leagues, the wind favourable, and the sea seemed to be pretty clear. At one o'clock they steered for an island of ice, thinking, if there were any loose ice round it, to take some on board, and convert it into fresh water. At four they brought to, close under the lee of the island; where they did not find what they wanted, but saw upon it eighty-six penguins. This piece of ice was about half a mile in circuit, and one hundred feet high and upwards; for they lay for some minutes with every sail becalmed under it.

They continued to the westward, with a gentle gale; the weather being sometimes tolerably clear, and at other times thick and hazy, with snow. On the 30th, they shot one of the white birds; upon which they lowered a boat into the water to take it up; and by that means killed a penguin, which weighed eleven pounds and a half. The white bird was of the peterel tribe; the bill, which is rather short, is of a colour between black and dark blue; and the legs and feet are blue.

On the 2d of January 1773, the weather was so clear, that they might have seen land at fourteen or fifteen leagues distance.

On the 5th, however, they had much snow and sleet, which, as usual, froze on the rigging as it fell; so that every rope was covered with the finest transparent ice.

On the 9th, they brought to, and took up as much ice as yielded fifteen tuns of good fresh water.

water. The pieces taken up were hard, and solid as a rock ; some of them so large, that they were obliged to break them with pickaxes, before they could be taken into the boats.

The salt water which adhered to the ice, was so trifling, as not to be tasted, and after it had lain on the deck a short time, entirely drained off ; and the water, which the ice yielded, was perfectly sweet and well tasted. Captain Cook says, “ This is the most expeditious method of watering he ever met with.”

On the 17th, they saw no less than thirty-eight ice islands, about which many whales were playing.

On the 1st of February, in the afternoon, Captain Furneaux informed Captain Cook that he had just seen a large float of sea or rock weed, and about it several birds. These were, certainly, signs of the vicinity of land ; but whether it lay to the east or west, was not possible for them to know.

On the 8th of February, having lost sight of the Adventure, they suspected a separation had taken place, though they were at a loss to tell how it had happened. Captain Furneaux had been ordered by Captain Cook, in case he was separated, to cruise three days in the place where he last saw him ; he, therefore, continued making short boards, and firing half-hour guns, till the 9th in the afternoon, when the weather having cleared up, they could see several leagues round them, and found that the Adventure was not within the limits of their horizon. At this time they were about two or three leagues to the eastward of the situation they were in when they last saw her. Next day they saw nothing of her, notwithstanding

withstanding the weather was pretty clear, and Captain Cook had kept firing guns, and burning false fires all night. He, therefore, gave over looking for her, made sail, and steered S. E. with a fresh gale, accompanied with a high sea.

On the 17th, at nine in the morning, they bore down to an island of ice, which they reached by noon. It was full half a mile in circuit, and two hundred feet high at least; though very little loose ice about it. But while they were considering whether or no they should hoist out boats to take some up, a great quantity broke from the island. Of this detached part, they made a shift to get on board about nine or ten tons before eight o'clock, when they hoisted in the boats and made sail to the east, inclining to the south.

On the 23d, they tacked, and spent the night, which was exceedingly stormy, thick, and hazy, with fleet and snow, in making short boards. Surrounded on every side with danger, they wished for day light. This, when it came, served only to increase their apprehensions, by exhibiting to view, those huge mountains of ice, which, in the night, they had passed without seeing.

These dangers were, however, now become so familiar, that the apprehensions they caused were never of long duration; and were, in some measure, compensated both by the seasonable supplies of fresh water these ice islands afforded, and also, by their very romantic appearance, greatly heightened by the foaming of the waves, which at once filled the mind with admiration and horror, and can only be described by the hand of an able painter.

On the 7th of March, the weather became fair, the sky cleared up, and the night was remarkably pleasant, as well as the morning of the next day; which, for the brightness of the sky, and serenity and mildness of the weather, gave place to none they had seen since they had left the Cape of Good Hope. It was such as is little known in this sea; and, to make it still more agreeable, they had not one island of ice in sight.

March 17th, Captain Cook now came to a resolution, to quit the high southern latitudes, and to proceed to New Zealand, to look for the Adventure, and to refresh his people.

As the wind, which continued between the north and west, would not permit them to touch at Van Dieman's Land, they shaped their course to New Zealand; and being under no apprehensions of meeting with any danger, the captain was not backward in carrying sail.

For the three days past, the mercury in the thermometer had risen to forty-six, and the weather was quite mild. Seven or eight degrees of latitude had made a surprising difference in the temperature of the air, which they felt with an agreeable satisfaction.

On the 26th, they steered and entered Dusky Bay, about noon. In this bay they were all strangers; in Captain Cook's former voyage, he only discovered and named it.

After running about two leagues up the bay, and passing several of the isles which lay in it, they brought to, and hoisted out two boats; one of which was sent away, with an officer, round a point on the larboard hand, to look for anchorage. This he found, and signified the same by signal.

signal. They then followed with the ship, and anchored in fifty fathoms water, so near the shore as to reach it with a hawser. They had now been one hundred and seventeen days at sea; in which time they sailed three thousand six hundred and sixty leagues, without having once sight of land.

After such a long continuance at sea, in a high southern latitude, it is but reasonable to think, that many of the people must be ill of the scurvy. The contrary, however, happened. Sweetwort had been given to such as were scorbutic. This had so far the desired effect, that they had only one man on board that could be called very ill of this disease; occasioned, chiefly, by a bad habit of body, and a complication of other disorders.

Their first care, after the ship was moored, was to send a boat and people a fishing, in which they were very successful, returning with fish sufficient for all hands for supper; and in a few hours in the morning, caught as many as served for dinner. This gave them certain hopes of being plentifully supplied with this article. Nor did the shores and woods appear less destitute of wild fowl; so that they hoped to enjoy, with ease, what, in their situation, might be called the luxuries of life. This determined them to stay some time in this bay, in order to examine it thoroughly; as no one had ever landed before, on any of the southern parts of this country.

About one hundred yards from the stern, was a fine stream of fresh water. Thus situated, they began to clear places in the woods, in order to set up the astronomer's observatory, the forge, and tents for the different artificers. They also began to brew beer from the branches or leaves of

a tree, which much resembles the American black spruce.

The few sheep and goats they had left were not likely to fare well, there being no grafs here, but what was coarse and harsh. It was expected, however, they would devour it with great greediness, but they were surpris'd to find they would not taste it. Upon examination they found their teeth loose; and that many of them had every other symptom of an inveterate sea scurvy. Out of four ewes and two rams, which Captain Cook brought from the Cape, with an intent to put ashore in this country, he had only been able to preserve one of each; and even these were in so bad a state, that it was doubtful if they could recover, notwithstanding all the care possible had been taken of them.

On the 28th, a canoe appeared, and in it seven or eight people. They remained looking at the ship for some time, and then returned; though signs of friendship were made. After dinner the captain took two boats, and went in search of them. They found a canoe hauled upon the shore, near to two small huts, where were several fire-places, some fishing nets, a few fish lying on the shore, and some in the canoe, but saw no people. After a short stay, and leaving in the canoe some medals, looking-glasses, beads, &c. they embarked and rowed to the head of the cove, where they found nothing remarkable.

On the 6th, the captain discovered a fine capacious cove, in the bottom of which is a fresh water river; on the west side several beautiful small cascades; and the shores are so steep, that a ship might lie near enough to convey the water into her by a hose.

As they returned in the evening, they had a short interview with three of the natives, one man and two women. They were the first that discovered themselves on the N. E. point of Indian Island, named so on this occasion. The man could not help discovering great signs of fear, when they approached the rock with the boat. He, however, stood firm; nor did he move to take up some things that were thrown to him. At length they landed, went up and embraced him; and presented him with such articles as they had, which at once dissipated his fears. Presently after they were joined by the two women, and some of the seamen. Night approaching, obliged them to return; when the youngest of the two women, whose volubility of tongue exceeded every thing they ever met with, gave them a dance.

Next morning they made the natives another visit, accompanied by Mr. Forster and Mr. Hodges, carrying with them various articles, which were received with a great deal of indifference, except hatchets and spike-nails. This interview was at the same place as last night; and now they saw the whole family. It consisted of the man, his two wives (as was supposed) the young woman before mentioned, a boy about fourteen years old, and three small children, the youngest of which was at the breast. They conducted them to their habitation, which was but a little way within the skirts of the wood, and consisted of two mean huts made of the bark of trees. Their canoe, which was a small double one, just large enough to transport the whole family from place to place, lay in a small creek near the huts. When they took leave, the chief presented Captain Cook with

a piece of cloth or garment of their own manufacturing, and some other trifles.

The 9th, they paid the natives another visit. They found them at their habitations, all dressed and dressing in their very best, with their hair combed and oiled, tied upon the crowns of their heads, and stuck with white feathers. Some wore a fillet of feathers round their heads; and all of them had bunches of white feathers stuck in their ears. Captain Cook presented the chief with a cloak he had got made for him, with which he seemed so well pleased, that he took his patoo patoo from his girdle, and gave it in return.

On the 12th, several of the natives came and sat down on the shore, abreast of the ship. The captain now caused the bagpipes and fife to play, and the drum to beat. The two first they did not regard, but the latter excited some little attention; nothing, however, could induce them to come on board. But they entered with great familiarity into conversation (little understood) with such of the officers and seamen as went to them, paying much greater regard to some than to others.

After several days rain, the weather again became clear, when the captain set out with two boats to survey the N. W. side of the bay, accompanied by the two Mr. Forsters, and several of the officers, whom he detached in one boat to a cove, where they intended to lodge the night, while he proceeded in the other, examining the harbours and isles which lay in his way. In the doing of this, he picked up about a score of wild fowl, and caught fish sufficient to serve the whole party; and reaching the place of rendezvous a little before dark, after a hearty repast on what the day had produced, they lay down to rest.

At

At day light they prepared for duck shooting, in which they were very successful, from which circumstance this was called Duck Cove. About a mile from hence, across an isthmus, they found an immense number of wood-hens. After breakfast they set out to return to the ship, which they reached by seven o'clock in the evening, with about seven dozen of wild fowl, and two seals.

On the 17th, two of the natives, the chief and his daughter, ventured on board; the captain took them both down into the cabin, where they were to breakfast; but they would not taste any of the victuals. The chief pried into every corner of the cabin, all parts of which he viewed with some surprise; but it was not possible to fix his attention to any one thing a single moment. The works of art appeared to him in the same light as those of nature, and were as far removed beyond his comprehension.

The chief, before he came aboard, presented the captain with a piece of cloth, and a green talc hatchet; to Mr. Forster he also gave a piece of cloth; and the girl gave another to Mr. Hodges. This custom of making presents, before they receive any, is common with the natives of the South Sea islands; but they never saw it practised in New Zealand before. Of all the various articles which were given to the chief, hatchets and spike-nails were the most valuable in his eyes.

On the 20th, they went ashore to examine the head of the bay, and in their way, firing at some ducks, the natives, who were not discovered before, set up a most hideous noise in two or three places close by them. The falling tide obliged them to retire out of the river to the place where they had spent the night. There they breakfasted,

ed, and just as the captain was returning on board, he saw two men on the opposite shore, hallooing to him, which induced him to row over to them. He landed, with two others, unarmed; the two natives standing, with each a spear in his hand.

At last, one of them was prevailed on to lay down his spear, and met the captain with a grass plant in his hand; one end of which he gave him to hold, while he held the other. Standing in this manner, he began a speech, and made some long pauses. As soon as this ceremony was over they saluted each other. He then took his ha-hou, or coat, from off his own back, and put it upon the captain; after which peace seemed firmly established.

When they took leave, the natives followed them to their boat, and seeing the muskets lying across the stern, they made signs for them to be taken away, which being done, they came alongside, and assisted to launch her. At this time it was necessary to look well after them, for they wanted to take away every thing they could lay their hands upon, except the muskets. These they took care not to touch, being taught by the slaughter they had seen made among the wild fowl, to look upon them as instruments of death.

In the afternoon of the 21st, they went a seal hunting. The surf ran so high that they could only land in one place, where they killed ten. These animals served three purposes; the skins were made use of for the rigging; the fat gave oil for their lamps; and the flesh they eat.

In the morning of the 23d, Mr. Pickersgill, Mr. Gilbert, and two others, ascended one of the mountains. In the evening they returned on board,

board, and reported that, inland, nothing was to be seen but barren mountains, with huge craggy precipices, disjoined by valleys, or rather chasms, frightful to behold.

Having five geese left out of those brought from the Cape of Good Hope, the captain turned them out where there was the greatest appearance of food and security. There is no doubt but that they will breed, and may, in time, spread over the whole country, and fully answer the intention of leaving them.

On the 27th, they had hazy weather. In the morning Captain Cook set out, accompanied by Mr. Pickersgill and the two Mr. Forsters, to explore an inlet seen the day before. After rowing about two leagues up it, it was found to communicate with the sea, and to afford a better outlet for ships bound to the north, than the one they came in by. After making this discovery, and refreshing themselves on broiled fish and wild fowl, they set out for the ship, and got on board at eleven o'clock at night. In this expedition they shot a number of birds of different kinds.

Having got the tents and every other article on board, on the 28th, they weighed with a light breeze, and stood up the bay for the new passage.

In the morning of the 11th of May, they weighed and stood out to sea; and by noon they got clear of the land.

The country is exceedingly mountainous; a prospect more rude and craggy is rarely to be met with; for inland appears nothing but the summits of mountains of a stupendous height, and consisting of rocks that are totally barren and naked, except where they are covered with snow. But the land bordering on the sea coast, and all the islands are
thickly

thickly clothed with wood, almost down to the water's edge. The trees are of various kinds, such as are common to other parts of the country, and are fit for the shipwright, house-carpenter, cabinet-maker, and many other uses.

Here are, as well as in all other parts of New Zealand, a great number of aromatic trees and shrubs, most of the myrtle kind; but amidst all this variety, there were none which bore fruit fit to eat. They saw supple-jacks fifty fathoms long.

The soil is a deep black mould, evidently composed of decayed vegetables, and so loose that it sinks under you at every step. Except the flax or hemp plant, and a few other plants, there is very little herbage of any sort. What Dusky Bay most abounds with is fish. Of this article the variety is almost equal to the plenty, and of such kinds as are common to the more northern coasts; but some are superior, and in particular the cole fish, as it was called, was, in the opinion of most on board, the highest luxury the sea afforded. The shell fish are, muscles, cockles, scallops, crawfish, and many other sorts.

They found here five different kinds of ducks, some of which Captain Cook did not recollect to have any where seen before. The largest are as big as a Muscovy duck, with a very beautiful variegated plumage, on which account they called it the Painted Duck.

For three or four days after they arrived, and were clearing the woods to set up their tents, a four-footed animal was seen, by three or four of the sailors, but as no two gave the same description of it, it is not easy to say of what kind it is. All, however, agreed, that it was about the size of a cat, with short legs, and of a mouse colour.

One

One of the seamen, and he who had the best view of it, said it had a bushy tail, and was the most like a jackall of any animal he knew. The most probable conjecture is, that it is of a new species.

The most mischievous animals here are the small black sand flies, which are very numerous, and exceedingly troublesome. Wherever they bite they cause a swelling, and intolerable itching, which at last brings on ulcers like the small-pox.

The inhabitants of this bay are of the same race of people with those in the other parts of this country, speak the same language, and observe nearly the same customs. What could induce three or four families (for there does not appear to be more) to separate themselves so far from the society of the rest of their fellow creatures, is not easy to guess. Few as they are, they do not seem to live in perfect amity one with another.

After leaving Dusky Bay, they steered for Queen Charlotte's Sound, where they expected to find the Adventure. In this passage they met with nothing remarkable, or worthy of notice, till the afternoon of the 17th, when the sky became suddenly obscured by dark dense clouds, and seemed to forebode much wind. Presently after six water-spouts were seen. Four rose and spent themselves between them and the land; the fifth was without them; the sixth first appeared at the distance of two or three miles from them. Its progressive motion was not in a straight, but in a crooked line, and passed within fifty yards of the stern, without their feeling any of its effects. The diameter of the base of this spout was judged to be about fifty or sixty feet. From this a tube or round body was formed, by which
the

the water, or air, or both, was carried in a spiral stream up to the clouds. Some of the sailors said, they saw a bird in the one near them; which was whirled round like the fly of a jack, as it was carried upwards. From the ascending motion of the bird, and several other circumstances, it is very plain, that these spouts are caused by whirlwinds; and that the water in them was violently hurried upwards, and did not descend from the clouds, as is generally supposed. The first appearance of them is by the violent agitation and rising up of the water; and, presently after, you see a round column or tube forming from the clouds above, which apparently descends till it joins the agitated water below. Captain Cook says, apparently, because he believes it not to be so in reality, but that the tube is already formed from the agitated water below, and ascends, though at first it is either too small or too thin to be seen. When the tube is formed, or becomes visible, its apparent diameter increases until it is pretty large; after that, it decreases; and, at last, it breaks or becomes invisible towards the lower part. Soon after, the sea below resumes its natural state; and the tube is drawn, by little and little, up to the clouds, where it is dissipated.

At day light, on the 18th of May, they arrived off Queen Charlotte's Sound, where they discovered the Adventure, by the signals she made; an event which every one felt with an agreeable satisfaction. At noon, Lieutenant Kemp, of the Adventure, came on board; from whom they learnt, that their ship had been there about six weeks. In the evening, they came to an anchor in Ship Cove, near the Adventure; when Captain Furneaux came on board, and gave Captain Cook

Cook the following account of his proceedings during their separation.

On the 7th of February 1773, in the morning, the Resolution being about two miles ahead, the wind shifting, brought on a very thick fog, so that the Adventure lost sight of her. They soon after heard a gun; and steering in the supposed direction, they kept firing a four pounder every half hour; but had no answer. In the evening it began to blow hard, and was, at intervals, more clear, but could see nothing of the Resolution, which gave them much uneasiness. They then tacked and stood to cruise in the place where they last saw her, according to agreement in case of separation; but next day came on a very heavy gale of wind and thick weather, that obliged them to bring to, and thereby prevented their reaching the intended spot. They cruised as near the place as they could get for three days; when giving over all hopes of joining company again, they bore away for winter quarters, distant fourteen hundred leagues, through a sea entirely unknown; and reduced the allowance of water to one quart per day. They were daily attended by great numbers of sea birds, and frequently saw porpoises.

On the 1st of March, they directed their course for the land laid down in their charts by the name of Van Diemen's Land, supposed to join to New Holland.

On the 9th of March, they saw the land bearing N.N.E. about eight or nine leagues distant. It appeared moderately high, and uneven near the sea. Here the country is hilly and well clothed with trees; they saw no inhabitants.

The morning on the 10th of March being calm, the ship, then about four miles from the land, sent the great cutter on shore, with the second lieutenant, to find if there was any harbour or good bay. Soon after, it beginning to blow very hard, they made the signal for the boat to return, several times, but they did not see or hear any thing of it; which gave them much uneasiness, as there was a very great sea. To their great satisfaction, in the afternoon, the boat returned safe. They landed, but with much difficulty; and saw several places where the Indians had been, and one they lately had left, where they had a fire. The weather obliged them to return without investigating the place properly; or finding any anchorage.

On the 16th they passed Maria's Islands, so named by Tasman; they appear to be the same as the main land. The land hereabouts is much pleasanter, low, and even; but no signs of a harbour or bay, where a ship might anchor with safety.

They stood to the eastward for Charlotte's Sound, with a light breeze at N. W. in the morning of the 5th of April, and on the 6th they had the sound open. As they sailed up it they saw the tops of high mountains covered with snow, which remains all the year. On the 7th they anchored in Ship Cove, in ten fathoms water.

The two following days were employed in clearing a place on Motuara Island, for erecting tents for the sick, the sail-makers, and coopers.

On the 9th, they were visited by three canoes with about sixteen of the natives; and to induce them to bring fish and other provisions, they gave them several things, with which they seemed highly

highly pleased. One of the crew seeing something carefully wrapt up, had the curiosity to examine what it was; and, to his great surprise, found it to be the head of a man lately killed. The natives were very apprehensive of its being forced from them; and as if sensible of their unnatural cannibalism, tried to conceal it, and to exculpate themselves from the charge. They frequently mentioned Tupia, and when they told them he was dead, some of them seemed to be very much concerned, and, as well as they could understand them, wanted to know whether he was killed, or if he died a natural death. By these questions, they are the same tribe Captain Cook saw. In the afternoon, they returned again with fish and fern roots, which they sold for nails and other trifles.

Next morning the natives returned, to the number of fifty or sixty, with their chief at their head (as was supposed) in five double canoes. They gave their implements of war, stone hatchets, and clothes, for nails and old bottles, on which they put a great value. A number of the men came on board, and it was with some difficulty they got them out of the ship by fair means; but on the appearance of a musket with a fixed bayonet, they all went into their canoes very quickly.

On the 11th of May, they felt two severe shocks of an earthquake, but received no kind of damage. On the 17th, they had the pleasure of seeing the Resolution off the mouth of the Sound.

Such is the detail of Captain Furneaux transactions, during an absence of fourteen weeks.

Captain Cook knowing that scurvy grass, celery, and other vegetables were to be found in Queen Charlotte's Sound, he gave orders that they

should be boiled, with wheat and portable broth, every morning for breakfast; and with pease and broth for dinner; knowing from experience, that these vegetables, thus dressed, are extremely beneficial in removing all manner of scorbutic complaints.

In the morning of the 20th, he sent ashore the only ewe and ram remaining, of those which he had brought from the Cape of Good Hope, with an intent to leave in this country. Soon after he visited the several gardens Captain Furneaux had caused to be made and planted with various articles; all of which were in a flourishing state, and, if attended to by the natives, may prove of great utility to them.

On the 22d in the morning, the ewe and ram he had with so much care and trouble brought to this place, were both found dead; occasioned, as was supposed, by eating some poisonous plant. Thus his hopes, of stocking this country with a breed of sheep, were blasted in a moment. About noon they were visited, for the first time since they arrived, by some of the natives, who dined with them; and it was not a little they devoured.

In the morning of the 24th, they met a large canoe, in which were fourteen or fifteen people. One of the first questions they asked, was for Tupia, the person brought from Otaheite on the former voyage; and they seemed to express some concern, when they told them he was dead.

One of these people, Captain Cook took and shewed him some potatoes, planted there by Mr. Fannen, master of the Endeavour. There seemed to be no doubt of their succeeding; and the man was so well pleased with them, that he, of his own accord, began to hoe the earth up about the plants



Richter del. et sc.

*Ludicrous Circumstance on board the
Resolution in Queen Charlotte's Sound.*

Published Jan^y 7. 1797. by E. Newbery, corner of St. Paul's. Page 185.

plants. They next took him to the other gardens, and shewed him the turnips, carrots, and parsnips; roots which, together with the potatoes, will be of more real use to them, than any other articles they had planted. It was easy to give them an idea of these roots, by comparing them with such as they knew.

Two or three families of these people now took up their abode near the ships, employing themselves daily in fishing, and supplying them with the fruits of their labour; the good effects of which were soon felt, for they were far more expert fishermen than the English.

On the 2d of June, the ships being nearly ready to put to sea, Captain Cook sent on shore two goats, male and female. Captain Furneaux also put on shore, in Cannibal Cove, a boar and two breeding sows; so that there is reason to hope this country will, in time, be stocked with these animals, if they are not destroyed by the natives before they become wild; for afterwards, they will be in no danger.

Early the next morning, some of the natives brought a large supply of fish. One of them desired Captain Cook to give his son a white shirt, which he accordingly did. The boy was so fond of his new dress, that he went all over the ship, presenting himself before every one that came in his way. This freedom, used by him, offended old Will the ram goat, who gave him a butt with his horns, and knocked him backward on the deck. Will would have repeated his blow, had not some of the people come to the boys assistance. The misfortune, however, seemed to him irreparable. The shirt was dirtied, and he was afraid to appear in the cabin before his father, until

brought in by Mr. Forster; when he told a very lamentable story against Goury the great dog, (for so they called all the quadrupeds that were on board,) nor could he be reconciled, till the shirt was washed and dried.

About nine o'clock, a large, double canoe, in which were twenty or thirty people, appeared in sight. The natives on board seemed much alarmed, saying that these were their enemies. Two of them, the one with a spear, and the other with a stone hatchet in his hand, mounted the arm-chests on the poop, and there, in a kind of bravado, bid those enemies defiance; while the others, who were on board, took to their canoe and went ashore, probably to secure the women and children.

However, they came on board, and were very peaceable. A trade soon commenced between the sailors and them. It was not possible to hinder the former from selling the clothes from off their backs for the merest trifles. This caused Captain Cook to dismiss the strangers sooner than he would have done.

June 4th, they spent their royal master's birthday in festivity; having the company of Captain Furneaux and all his officers. Double allowance enabled the seamen to share in the general joy.

During their stay in the Sound, Captain Cook observed that this second visit made to this country, had not mended the morals of the natives of either sex. The men were become more mercenary; and not only connived at, but encouraged the prostitution of their women for a bribe.

On the 7th of June, at four in the morning, the wind being favourable, they unmoored, and
at

at seven weighed and put to sea, with the Adventure in company.

Nothing material occurred till the 29th, when Captain Cook was informed the crew of the Adventure was sickly; and this he found was but too true. Her cook was dead, and about twenty of her best men were down in the scurvy and flux. At this time, his ship had only three men on the sick list, and only one of them attacked with the scurvy. Several more, however, began to shew symptoms of it, and were put upon the wort, marmalade of carrots, rob of lemons and oranges.

To introduce any new article of food among seamen, let it be ever so much for their good, requires both the example and authority of a commander; without both of which, it will be dropt before the people are sensible of the benefits resulting from it. Many of the people, officers as well as seamen, at first disliked celery, scurvy-grass, &c. being boiled in the peas and wheat; and some refused to eat it. But as this had no effect on Captain Cook's conduct, this obstinate kind of prejudice by little and little wore off; and they began to like it as well as the others.

The sickly state of the Adventure's crew made it necessary to make their best way to Otaheite, where they were sure of finding refreshments. Consequently they continued their course to the west; and at six o'clock in the evening, land was seen from the mast-head, bearing west by south. Captain Cook called it Doubtful Island; the getting to a place where they could procure refreshments was more an object at this time than discovery.

At day break on the 12th, they discovered land right ahead, distant about two miles; so that day-light advised them of their danger but just in time. This proved another of these low or half-drowned islands, or rather a large coral shoal, of about twenty leagues in circuit.

The next morning at four, they made sail, and at day-break saw another of these low islands, which obtained the name of Adventure Island. M. de Bougainville very properly calls this cluster of low overflowed isles the Dangerous Archipelago. The smoothness of the sea sufficiently convinced them that they were surrounded by them, and how necessary it was to proceed with the utmost caution, especially in the night.

On the 15th, at five o'clock in the morning, they saw Osnaburg Island, or Maitea, discovered by Captain Wallis. Soon after they brought to, and waited for the Adventure to come up with them, to acquaint Captain Furneaux, that it was his intention to put into Oaiti-piha Bay, in Otaheite, in order to get what refreshments they could from that part of the island, before they went down to Matavia. This done, they made sail, and at six in the evening saw the island bearing west.

As they approached the coast, a number of the inhabitants came off in canoes from different parts; bringing with them a little fish, a few coconuts, and other fruits, which they exchanged for nails and beads. Most of them knew Captain Cook again; and many enquired for Mr. Banks and others who were with him before; but not one asked for Tupia.

As they were in the vicinity of a reef, the tide strong, and a perfect calm, they were in the most imminent

imminent danger of shipwreck. Every expedient was tried to haul off the ship, but in vain, till a light breeze springing up off the land, wafted the ship once more into the open sea, though not without considerable loss and damage.

Thus they were once more safe at sea, after narrowly escaping being wrecked, on the very island, they but a few days before so ardently wished to be at. The calm, after bringing them into this dangerous situation, very fortunately continued. For had the sea-breeze, as is usual, set in, the *Resolution* must inevitably have been lost, and probably the *Adventure* too.

During the time they were in this critical situation, a number of the natives were on board, and about the ships. They seemed to be insensible of danger, shewed not the least surprise, joy or fear, when the ships were striking, and left them a little before sun-set, quite unconcerned.

Next morning, being the 17th, they anchored in Oaiti-piha Bay, about two cables length from the shore, both ships being by this time crowded with a great number of the natives, who brought with them cocoa-nuts, plantains, bananas, apples, yams, and other roots, which they exchanged for nails and beads. To several, who called themselves chiefs, Captain Cook made presents of shirts, axes, and several other articles; and in return, they promised to bring hogs and fowls; a promise they never did, nor ever intended to perform.

Many, who called themselves earees, or chiefs, came on board, partly with a view of getting presents, and partly to pilfer whatever came in their way. One of this sort of earees the captain had most of the day in the cabin, and made presents to him,

him and all his friends, which were not a few. At length he was caught taking things which did not belong to him, and handing them out at the quarter gallery. Many complaints of the like nature were made to him against those on deck, which occasioned his turning them all out of the ship. The cabin guest made good haste to be gone.—The captain was so much exasperated at his behaviour, that after he had got some distance from the ship, he fired two muskets over his head, which made him quit the canoe and take to the water. He then sent a boat to take up the canoe; and ordered a great gun, loaded with ball, to be fired along the coast, which made all the natives retire from the shore. A few hours after they were all good friends again.

It was not till the evening of this day, that any one enquired after Tupia, and then but two or three. As soon as they learned the cause of his death, they were quite satisfied; indeed it did not appear to them that it would have caused a moment's uneasiness in the breast of any one, had his death been occasioned by any other means than by sickness.

Nothing worthy of note happened on the 20th, till the dusk of the evening, when one of the natives made off with a musket belonging to the guard on shore. Captain Cook was present when this happened, and sent some of his people after him, which would have been to little purpose, had not some of the natives, of their own accord, pursued the thief. They knocked him down, took from him the musket, and brought it back. Fear, on this occasion, certainly operated more with them than principle. They, however, deserve to be applauded for this act of justice.

In

In the evening, Captain Cook was informed that Waheatoua was come into the neighbourhood, and wanted to see him. In consequence of this information, he determined to wait one day longer, in order to have an interview with this prince. Accordingly, early the next morning, he set out, in company with Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and several of the natives. They found him seated on a stool, with a circle of people round him. They knew each other at first sight, though they had not met since 1769. At that time he was but a boy, and went by the name of Tearee; but upon the death of his father, Waheatoua, he took upon him that name.

After the first salutation was over, having seated the captain on the same stool with himself, and the other gentlemen on the ground by them, he began to enquire after several by name, who were engaged in the former voyage. He next enquired how long they would stay; and when he told him no longer than next day, he seemed sorry, asked the captain to stay some months, and at last came down to five days; promising in that time, he should have hogs in plenty. But as he had been here already a week, without so much as getting one, he could not put any faith in this promise. In return for the present he received, he ordered a pretty good hog to be carried to their boat.

During the time they staid, he never suffered Captain Cook to go from his side, where he was seated; at length they took leave, in order to return on board to dinner. This day they got as much fresh pork as gave the crews of both ships a meal, in consequence of their having this inter-
view

view with the chief. The 24th, early in the morning, they put to sea with a light land breeze.

The fruits they got here greatly contributed towards the recovery of the Adventure's sick people. Many of them who had been so ill as not to be able to move without assistance, were in this short time so far recovered, that they could walk about of themselves. It was not till the evening of this day that they arrived in Matavia Bay.

Before they got to an anchor, their decks were crowded with the natives; many of whom Captain Cook knew, and almost all of them knew him. A great crowd was assembled together upon the shore, amongst whom was Otoo, their king. The captain was just going to pay him a visit, when he was told he was mataow'd, and gone to Oparree.

He set out on the 26th for Oparree, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and others. As soon as they landed, they were conducted to Otoo, whom they found seated on the ground, under the shade of a tree, with an immense crowd round him. After the first compliments were over, the captain presented him with such articles as were supposed to be most valuable in his eyes, well knowing that it was his interest to gain the friendship of this man. He also made presents to several of his attendants; and, in return, they offered him cloth, which he refused to accept; telling them that what he had given was for tioy (friendship). The king enquired for Tupia, and all the gentlemen that were with the captain in his former voyage, by name. He promised that they should have some hogs the next day; but he had much ado to obtain a promise

mise from him to visit him on board. He said he was, mataou no te paupoue, that is, afraid of the guns. Indeed all his actions shewed him a timorous prince. He was about thirty years of age, six feet high, and a fine, personable, well made man. All his subjects appeared uncovered before him, his father not excepted. What is meant by uncovering, is the making bare the head and shoulders, or wearing no sort of clothing above the breast.

On the 27th, Otoo, attended by a numerous train, paid them a visit. He first sent into the ship a large quantity of cloth, fruits, a hog, and two large fish; and, after some persuasion, came aboard himself, with his sister, a younger brother, and several more attendants. Among other presents distributed on this occasion, Captain Furneaux presented the king two fine goats, male and female, which will no doubt multiply.

Very early in the morning on the 28th, they had another visit from Otoo, who brought more cloth, a pig, and some fruit. His sister, who was with him, and some of his attendants, came on board: but he and others went to the Adventure, with the like presents to Captain Furneaux. It was not long before he returned with Captain Furneaux on board the Resolution, when Captain Cook made him a handsome return for the present he had brought him, and dressed his sister out in the best manner he could. When Otoo came into the cabin, Ereti and some of his friends were sitting there. The moment they saw the king enter, they stripped themselves in great haste, being covered before. This was all the respect they paid him; for they never rose from their seats, nor made any other obeisance. When

the king thought proper to depart, he was carried to Oparree in a boat; where Captain Cook entertained him, and his people, with the bagpipes (of which music they are very fond), and dancing by the seamen. He, in return, ordered some of his people to dance also, which consisted chiefly of contortions.

Next morning they took a trip to Oparree, again to visit Otoo. They made him up a present of such things as he had not seen before. One article was a broadsword; at the sight of which he was so intimidated, that Captain Cook had much ado to persuade him to accept of it, and to have it buckled upon him; where it remained but a short time, before he desired leave to take it off and send it out of his sight.

Soon after they were conducted to the theatre; where they were entertained with a dramatic heava, or play, in which were both dancing and comedy. The performers were five men, and one woman, who was no less a person than the king's sister. The music consisted of three drums only; it lasted about an hour and a half, or two hours, and upon the whole was well conducted. It was not possible for them to find out the meaning of the play. Some part seemed adapted to the present time, as Captain Cook's name was frequently mentioned. Other parts were certainly wholly unconnected with them. The dancing-dress of the lady was very handsome, being decorated with tassels, made of feathers, hanging from the waste downward. As soon as all was over, the king dismissed Captain Cook with presents of fruit and fish.

Nothing farther remarkable happened till ten o'clock in the evening, when they were alarmed
1 with

with the cry of murder, and a great noise on shore, near the bottom of the bay, at some distance from the encampment. Captain Cook suspected that it was occasioned by some of his own people; and immediately armed a boat and sent on shore, which soon returned with three marines, and a seaman. Some others, belonging to the Adventure, were also taken, and being all put under confinement, the next morning the captain ordered them to be punished according to their deserts. He did not find that any mischief was done, and the people would confess nothing. The natives, however, were so much alarmed, that they fled from their habitations in the dead of the night, and the alarm spread many miles along the coast. For when Captain Cook went to visit Otoo, in the morning, by appointment, he found him removed, or rather fled, many miles from the place of his abode. Even there he was obliged to wait some hours, before he could see him at all; and when he did, he complained of the last night's riot.

As this was intended to be the last visit, Captain Cook had taken with him a present suitable to the occasion. Among other things were three Cape sheep, which he had seen before and asked for. He was much pleased with them; though he could be but little benefited, as they were all wethers. The presents he got at this interview entirely removed his fears, and opened his heart so much, that he sent for three hogs, which he presented to them.

They now took leave, and informed him they should quit the island the next day; at which he seemed much moved, and embraced the captain several times.

On the 1st of September, the ships unmoored. Some hours before they got under sail, a young man, whose name was Poreo, came and desired the captain would take him with him, to which he consented. Many more offered themselves, but he refused to take them. This youth asked for an axe and a spike-nail for his father, who was then on board. He had them accordingly, and they parted just as they were getting under sail, more like two strangers than father and son. This raised a doubt whether it was so; which was farther confirmed by a canoe, coming alongside, as they were standing out of the bay, and demanding the young man in the name of Otoo. The artifice was now seen through: it was merely to extort something from the captain that Poreo had volunteered it. However, he was given to understand that unless he returned the axe and nails he could not be dismissed. As these were on shore, he was carried away, pretty well satisfied, though a few tears fell when he viewed the land astern.

As soon as they were clear of the bay, they directed their course for the island of Huaheine, where they intended to touch; on the morning of the 3d, they anchored in the harbour of Owharre. As soon as the ships were in safety, Captain Cook landed with Captain Furneaux, and was received by the natives with the utmost cordiality. Some presents were distributed among them; and presently after, they brought down hogs, fowls, dogs, and fruits, which they willingly exchanged for hatchets, nails, and beads. The like trade was soon opened on board the ship; so that they had a fair prospect of being plentifully supplied with fresh pork and fowls; and, to people

ple in their situation, this was no unwelcome thing.

Early the next morning, Lieutenant Pickersgill failed with the cutter, on a trading party, toward the south end of the isle. This gentleman had seen Oberea while they lay at Otaheite, who was now decrepid and poor. Captain Cook also sent another trading party on shore near the ships, with which he went himself, to see that it was properly conducted at the first setting out, a very necessary point to be attended to.

On the 4th Captain Cook wanted to go to Oree, the king; but was told he would come to him; which he accordingly did, fell upon his neck, and embraced him. This was by no means ceremonious; the tears, which trickled plentifully down his venerable old cheeks, sufficiently bespoke the language of his heart. His friends were also introduced to them, to whom they made presents. In return he gave them a hog, and a quantity of cloth, promising that all their wants should be supplied.

This good old chief paid them a visit early in the morning on the 5th, together with some of his friends, bringing a hog and some fruit. He carried his kindness so far, as not to fail to send every day, for Captain Cook's table, the very best of ready-dressed fruit and roots, and in great plenty. Lieutenant Pickersgill returned in the evening with twenty-eight hogs; and about four times that number were purchased on shore, and along-side the ships.

Next day the people crowded in from every part with hogs, fowls, and fruit, so that they presently filled two boats. Oree himself presented a large hog and a quantity of fruit. Oree and

Captain Cook were professed friends in all the forms customary among them; and he seemed to think that this could not be broken by the act of any other persons.

On the 7th, early in the morning, while the ships were unmooring, Captain Cook went to pay his farewell visit to Oree, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forster. They took with them, for a present, such things as were not only valuable, but useful. He also left with him the inscription plate he had before in keeping, and another small copper-plate, on which were engraved these words, "Anchored here, his Britannic Majesty's ships Resolution and Adventure, September 1773," together with some medals, all put up in a bag; of which the chief promised to take care, and to produce to the first ship or ships that should arrive at the island. He then gave a hog; and after loading the boat with fruit, they took leave; when the good old chief embraced the captain with tears in his eyes.

During their short stay at the small but fertile isle of Huaheine, they procured to both ships not less than three hundred hogs, besides fowls and fruits; and had they staid longer, might have got many more; for none of these articles of refreshment were seemingly diminished, but appeared every where in as great abundance as ever.

Before they quitted this island, Captain Furneaux agreed to receive on board his ship a young man named Omai, a native of Ulietea, where he had some property, of which he had been dispossessed by the people of Bolabola. Captain Cook wondered that Captain Furneaux would encumber himself with this man, who, in his opinion, was not a proper sample of the inhabitants of these
happy

happy islands, not having any advantage of birth, or acquired rank, nor being eminent in shape, figure, or complexion. The captain, however, since his arrival in England, has been convinced of his error; and doubts whether any other of the natives would have given more general satisfaction by his behaviour among them. “ Omai, observes Captain Cook, has certainly a very good understanding, quick parts, and honest principles; he is of good natural behaviour, which rendered him acceptable to the best company, and a proper degree of pride, which taught him to avoid the society of persons of inferior rank. He has passions of the same kind as other young men, but has judgment enough not to indulge them in any improper degree. I do not imagine that he has any dislike to liquor, and if he had fallen into company where the person who drank the most, met with the most approbation, I have no doubt, but that he would have endeavoured to gain the applause of those with whom he associated; but fortunately for him, he perceived that drinking was very little in use but among inferior people, and as he was very watchful into the manners and conduct of the persons of rank who honoured him with their protection, he was sober and modest, and I never heard that, during the whole time of his stay in England, which was two years, he ever once was disguised with wine, or ever shewed an inclination to go beyond the strictest rules of moderation.

“ Soon after his arrival in London, the Earl of Sandwich, the first lord of the admiralty, introduced him to his majesty at Kew, when he met with a most gracious reception, and imbibed the strongest impression of duty and gratitude to that
great

great and amiable prince, which I am persuaded he will preserve to the latest moment of his life. During his stay among us, he was carested by many of the principal nobility, and did nothing to forfeit the esteem of any one of them; but his principal patrons were the Earl of Sandwich, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander; the former probably thought it a duty of his office to protect and countenance an inhabitant of that hospitable country, where the wants and distresses of those in his department had been alleviated and supplied in the most ample manner; the others, as a testimony of their gratitude for the generous reception they had met with during their residence in his country. It is to be observed, that though Omai lived in the midst of amusements during his residence in England, his return to his native country was always in his thoughts, and though he was not impatient to go, he expressed a satisfaction as the time of his return approached. He embarked with me in the *Resolution*, when she was fitted out for another voyage, loaded with presents from his several friends, and full of gratitude for the kind reception and treatment he had experienced among us."

On the 8th of September, they anchored at Ulietea, and a trade soon commenced with the natives. Next morning they paid a formal visit to Oreo, the chief of this part of the isle, carrying with them the necessary presents. He was seated in his own house, which stood near the water-side, where he and his friends received them with great cordiality. He expressed much satisfaction at seeing Captain Cook again, and desired that they might exchange names, which he accordingly agreed to. This is the strongest
mark

mark of friendship they can shew to a stranger. After they had made the chief and his friends the necessary presents, they went on board with a hog, and some fruit, received from him in return.

After breakfast, on the 10th, Captain Furneaux and Captain Cook paid the chief a visit; and they were entertained by him with such a comedy, or dramatic heava, as is generally acted in these isles. The music consisted of three drums; the actors were seven men, and one woman, the chief's daughter. The only entertaining part of the drama, was a theft committed by a man and his accomplice, in such a masterly manner, as sufficiently displayed the genius of the people in this vice. Captain Cook says, "I was very attentive to the whole of this part, being in full expectation that it would have ended very differently. For I had before been informed that Teto (that is, the thief) was to be acted, and had understood that the theft was to be punished with death, or a good tiparrahying (or beating), a punishment, we are told, they inflict on such as are guilty of this crime. Be this as it may, strangers are certainly excluded from the protection of this law; them they rob, with impunity, on every occasion that offers."

On the 16th Captain Cook was told that his Otaheitean young man, Poreo, had taken a resolution to leave him, and was actually gone; having met with a young woman, for whom he had contracted a friendship, he went away with her, and he saw him no more.

Having now got on board a large supply of refreshments, the captain determined to put to sea the next morning, and made the same known to
the

the chief, who promised to see him again before he departed. As soon as it was light, Oreo, his son, and some of his friends, came on board. Many canoes also came off with fruit and hogs; the latter they even begged of them to take from them, calling out *Tiyo boa atoi*—I am your friend, take my hog, and give me an axe. But the decks were already so full of them, that they could hardly move; having on board both ships, between three and four hundred. It is not easy to say how many they might have got, could they have found room for all that were offered them.

The chief and his friends did not leave them till they were under sail: and before he went away, pressed them much to know if they would not return, and when? Questions which were daily put by many of these islanders. The Otaheitean youth's leaving Captain Cook proved of no consequence, as many young men of this island, voluntarily offered to come away with them: he thought proper to take on board one, who was about seventeen or eighteen years of age, named Oedidee, a native of Bolabola, and a near relation of Opoony, chief of that island.

The island of Otaheite, which in the year 1767 and 1768, as it were, swarmed with hogs and fowls, was now so ill supplied with these animals, that hardly any thing could induce the owners to part with them.

As Captain Cook had some reason to believe, that amongst the religious customs of these people, human sacrifices were sometimes considered as necessary, he went one day to a Marai in Matavai, in company with Captain Furneaux; having with them, as they had upon all other occasions,
one

one of their own men who spoke their language tolerably well, and several of the natives, one of whom appeared to be an intelligent, sensible man. In the Marai was a Tupapow, on which lay a dead corpse and some viands. He began with asking questions relating to the several objects before him; if the plantains, &c. were for the Eatua? If they sacrificed to the Eatua, hogs, dogs, fowls, &c. To all of which he answered in the affirmative; but they did not sufficiently understand the language to have a perfect comprehension of his meaning.

He has since learnt from Omai, that they offer human sacrifices to the Supreme Being. According to his account, what men shall be so sacrificed, depends on the caprice of the high priest, who, when they are assembled on any solemn occasion, retires alone into the house of God, and stays there some time. When he comes out, he informs them that he has seen and conversed with their great God, and that he has asked for a human sacrifice, and tells them that he has desired such a person, naming a man present, whom most probably the priest has an antipathy against. He is immediately killed, and so falls a victim to the priest's resentment, who, no doubt, if necessary, has address enough to persuade the people that he was a bad man.

After leaving Ulietea on the 17th of September, 1773, they steered to the west, and on the 1st of October, they saw the island of Middleburg. As they approached the shore, two canoes came boldly along-side, and some of the natives entered the ship without hesitation. This mark of confidence gave Captain Cook a good opinion of these islanders, and determined him to visit them
if

if possible. They found good anchorage, and came to in twenty-five fathoms water. They had scarcely got to an anchor, before they were surrounded by a great number of canoes full of people, who began a traffic. Among them was a chief, named Tioony, to whom the captain made a present of a hatchet, spike-nails, and several other articles, with which he was highly pleased.

Soon after, a party of them embarked in two boats, in company with Tioony, who conducted them to a little creek formed by the rocks, right abreast of the ships, where landing was extremely easy, and the boats secure against the surf. Here they found an immense crowd of people, who welcomed them on shore with loud acclamations. Not one of them had so much as a stick, or any other weapon in his hand; an indubitable sign of their pacific intentions. They thronged so thick round the boats with cloth and matting, to exchange for nails, that it was some time before they could get room to land. Many who could not get near the boats, threw into them, over the others heads, whole bales of cloth, and then retired, without either asking or waiting to get any thing in return. The chief conducted them to his house, about three hundred yards from the sea, at the head of a fine lawn, and under the shade of some shaddock trees. The situation was most delightful. In front was the sea, and the ships at anchor; behind, and on each side, were plantations, in which were some of the richest productions of nature. The floor was laid with mats, on which they were placed, and the people seated themselves in a circle round them on the outside. Having the bagpipes with them,



Richter del. et sc.

*Capt.ⁿ Cook's Visit to the Chief of
Middleburg Island.*

Page 204.

Published Jan^y 7. 1797. by E. Newbery. corner of St. Paul's

Captain Cook ordered them to be played ; and in return, the chief directed three young women to sing a song, which they did with a very good grace ; and having made each of them a present, this immediately set all the women in the circle a singing. Their songs were musical and harmonious. Bananas and cocoa-nuts were set before them to eat, and a bowl of liquor prepared in their presence, of the juice of Eava, for them to drink. But Captain Cook was the only one who tasted it ; the manner of brewing it having quenched the thirst of every one else. The bowl was, however, soon emptied of its contents by the natives.

They returned on board to dinner, with the chief in their company. He sat at table, but eat nothing ; which, as they had fresh pork roasted, was a little extraordinary. Near some of the houses, and in the lanes that divided the plantations, were running about some hogs and very large fowls, which were the only domestic animals they saw ; and these they did not seem willing to part with, which determined them to leave this place.

The evening brought every one on board, highly delighted with the country, and the very obliging behaviour of the inhabitants, who seemed to vie with each other in doing what they thought would give pleasure. After making the chief a present, consisting of various articles, and an assortment of garden seeds, Captain Cook gave him to understand that they were going away, at which he seemed not at all moved.

As soon as the captain was on board, they made sail down to Amsterdam ; opening the west side of the isle, they were met by several canoes, each

conducted by three or four men. They came boldly along-side, presented them with some Ea-va root, and then came on board, without farther ceremony, inviting them by all the friendly signs they could make to go to their island, and pointing to the place where they should anchor.

Having secured the ships, Captain Cook landed, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and several of the officers; having along with them a chief, or person of some note, whose name was Attago, who had attached himself to the captain from the first moment of his coming on board, which was before they anchored.

After walking a little way into the country, they returned to the landing-place, and there found Mr. Wales in a laughable, though distressed situation. The boats which brought them on shore not being able to get near the landing-place, for want of a sufficient depth of water, he pulled off his shoes and stockings to walk through, and as soon as he got on dry land, he put them down betwixt his legs to put on again, but they were instantly snatched away by a person behind him; who immediately mixed with the crowd. It was impossible for him to follow the man barefooted over the sharp coral rocks, which compose the shore, without having his feet cut to pieces. The boat was put back to the ship, his companions had each made his way through the crowd, and he left in this condition alone. The chief soon found out the thief, and recovered his shoes and stockings, and of his own accord conducted them to a plantation hard by, and shewed them a pool of fresh water, though they had not made the least enquiry after any.

Mr.

Mr. Forster and his party spent the day in the country botanising, and several of the officers were out shooting. All of them were very civilly treated by the natives. A boat from each ship was employed trading on shore, and bringing off their cargoes as soon as they were laden, which was generally in a short time. By this method they got cheaper, and with less trouble, a good quantity of fruit, as well as other refreshments, from people who had no canoes to carry them off to the ships.

Though the natives began to shew a propensity to pilfering, the different trading parties were so successful as to procure for both ships a tolerable good supply of refreshments. In consequence of which, Captain Cook, the next morning, gave every one leave to purchase what curiosities they pleased. After this, it was astonishing to see with what eagerness every one caught at every thing he saw. It even went so far as to become the ridicule of the natives, who offered pieces of sticks and stones to exchange. One waggish boy took a piece of human excrement on the end of a stick, and held it out to every one he met with.

One of the natives having got into the master's cabin, took out some books and other things. He was discovered just as he was getting out into his canoe, and pursued by one of the boats, which obliged him to quit the canoe and take to the water. The people in the boat made several attempts to lay hold on him; but he, as often, dived under the boat, and at last unshipping the rudder, he got clear off. Some other very daring thefts were committed at the landing-place. One fellow took a seaman's jacket out of the boat, and carried it off, in spite of all the people in her.

The rest of the natives, who were very numerous, took very little notice of the whole transaction; nor were they the least alarmed when the man was fired at.

Attago visited Captain Cook again the next morning, and brought with him a hog, and assisted him in purchasing several more. This day the captain was told by the officers who were on shore, that a far greater man than any they had yet seen was come to pay them a visit. Mr. Pickersgill informed them that he had seen him in the country, and found that he was a man of some consequence, by the extraordinary respect paid to him by the people. Some, when they approached him, fell on their faces, and put their head between their feet; and no one durst pass him without permission. The captain found him seated near the landing-place with so much fullen and stupid gravity, that notwithstanding what had been told him, he really took him for an idiot, whom the people, from some superstitious notions, were ready to worship. He saluted and spoke to him; but he neither answered, nor did he alter a single feature in his countenance. This confirmed him in his opinion, and he was just going to leave him, when one of the natives undertook to undeceive him; which he did in such a manner as left no room to doubt that he was the king, or principal man on the island. Accordingly he made him a present, which consisted of a shirt, an ax, a piece of red cloth, a looking-glass, some nails, medals, and beads. He received these things, or rather suffered them to be put upon him, and laid by him, without losing a bit of his gravity, speaking one word, or turning his head either to the right or left; sitting the whole time

time like a statue; in which situation he left him, to return on board, and he soon after retired. The captain had not been long on board, before word was brought that a quantity of provisions had come from this chief. A boat was sent to bring it from the shore; and it consisted of about twenty baskets of roasted bananas, four bread and yams, and a roasted pig of about twenty pounds weight. The bearers said it was a present from the areeke, that is the king of the island, to the areeke of the ship. After this they were no longer to doubt the dignity of this sullen chief, whose name was Kohaghee-too-Fallangou.

The captain again went on shore and made this great man a suitable return, and immediately prepared for quitting the place. At ten o'clock they got under sail. The supplies they got at this isle were about one hundred and fifty pigs, twice that number of fowls, as many bananas and cocoa-nuts as they could find room for, with a few yams; and had their stay been longer, they, no doubt, might have got a great deal more.

These islands were first discovered by Captain Tasman, in January 1642-3; and, by him, called Amsterdam and Middleburg. But the former is called by the natives Ton-ga-ta-bu, the latter Ea-oo-wee.

The produce and cultivation of Middleburg and Amsterdam are the same; with this difference, that a part only of the former, whereas the whole of the latter, is cultivated. The lanes or roads necessary for travelling, are laid out in so judicious a manner, as to open a free and easy communication from one part of the island to the other. Here are no towns or villages, most of the

houses are built in the plantations, with no other order than what convenience requires. They have little areas before the most of them, which are generally planted round with trees, or shrubs of ornament, whose fragrancy perfumes the very air in which they breathe. Their household furniture consists of a few wooden platters, cocoa-nut shells, and some wooden pillows, shaped like four-footed stools or forms. Their common clothing, with the addition of a mat, serves them for bedding.

They saw no other domestic animals amongst them but hogs and fowls. The former are of the same sort as at the other isles in this sea; but the latter are far superior, being as large as any we have in Europe, and their flesh equally good, if not better. The land birds are numerous. The produce of the sea they knew but little of; it is reasonable to suppose that the same sorts of fish are found here as at the other isles. Their fishing instruments are the same.

Nothing can be a more demonstrative evidence of their ingenuity, than the construction and make of their canoes, which, in point of neatness and workmanship, exceed every thing of the kind they saw in this sea. They are built of several pieces sewed together with bandage, in so neat a manner, that on the outside it is difficult to see the joints. All the fastenings are on the inside, and pass through kants or ridges, which are wrought on the edges and ends of the several boards, which compose the vessel, for that purpose. At each end is a kind of deck, one third part of the whole length, and open in the middle. These single canoes have all out-riggers, and are sometimes navigated with sails, but more generally with paddles. The two vessels which
compose

compose the double canoe are each about sixty or seventy feet long, and four or five broad in the middle; and each end terminates nearly in a point; so that the body or hull differs a little in construction from the single canoe; but is put together exactly in the same manner.

All the parts which compose the double canoe, are made as strong and light as the nature of the work will admit, and may be immersed in water to the very platform, without being in danger of filling. Nor is it possible, under any circumstance whatever, for them to sink, so long as they hold together. Thus they are not only made vessels of burthen, but fit for distant navigation. They are rigged with one mast, and are sailed with a latteen-sail, or triangular one, extended by a long yard, which is a little bent or crooked. The sail is made of mats; the rope they made use of is laid exactly like those of Europe, and some of it is four or five inch. On the platform is built a little shed or hut, which screens the crew from the sun and weather, and serves for other purposes.

Their working tools are made of stone, bones, and shells, as at the other islands. When they viewed the work which is performed with these tools, they were struck with admiration at the ingenuity and patience of the workman. Their knowledge of the utility of iron was no more than sufficient to teach them to prefer nails to beads, and such trifles; some, but a very few, would exchange a pig for a large nail, or a hatchet. Old jackets, shirts, cloth, and even rags, were in more esteem than the best edge-tool they could give them; consequently, they got but few axes but what were presents. The only piece of iron they saw among them was a small broad awl, which had been made of a nail.

Both

Both men and women are of a common size with Europeans; and their colour is that of a lightish copper, and more uniformly so than amongst the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Society Isles. The women are the merriest creatures they ever met with, and will keep chattering by one's side, without the least invitation, or considering whether they are understood, provided one does but seem pleased with them. In general, they appeared to be modest, although there was no want of those of a different stamp.

They have fine eyes, and, in general, good teeth, even to an advanced age. The custom of tattowing, or puncturing the skin prevails. The men are tattowed from the middle of the thigh to above the hips. The women have it only on their arms and fingers; and there but very slightly.

The dress of both sexes consists of a piece of cloth, or matting, wrapped round the waist, and hanging down below the knees. From the waist, upwards, they are generally naked; and it seemed to be a custom to anoint these parts every morning.

Their ornaments are amulets, necklaces, and bracelets of bones, shells, and beads of mother of pearl, and tortoise-shell, which are worn by both sexes. They make various sorts of matting; some of a very fine texture, which is generally used for clothing; and the thick and stronger sort serves to sleep on, and to make sails for their canoes. Among other useful utensils, they have various sorts of baskets; some made of the same materials as their mats; and others of the twisted fibres of cocoa-nuts. These are not only durable but beautiful, being generally composed of different colours, and studded with beads made of shells

shells or bones. In short, they display abundance of ingenuity in their different manufactures.

The women frequently entertained them with songs, in a manner which was agreeable enough. They accompany the music by snapping their fingers, so as to keep time to it. Not only their voices, but their music was very harmonious, and they have a considerable compass in their notes. Their only instruments are a flute and a drum.

The common method of saluting one another is by touching or meeting noses, as is done in New Zealand; and their sign of peace to strangers, is the displaying a white flag or flags; at least such were displayed to them when they first drew near the shore. From their unsuspicious manner of coming on board, and of receiving them at first on shore, it appears they are seldom disturbed by either foreign or domestic troubles. They are, however, not unprovided with very formidable weapons; such as clubs and spears, made of hard wood, also bows and arrows.

They have a singular custom of putting every thing you give them to their heads, by way of thanks. Very often the women would take hold of Captain Cook's hand, kiss it, and lift it to their heads.

A very peculiar barbarism prevails in these isles. They observed that the greater part of the people, both men and women, had lost one, or both their little fingers*. They endeavoured, but in vain, to find out the reason of this mutilation. It was neither peculiar to rank, age, nor sex; nor is it done at any certain age, as they

* This custom is not peculiar to the inhabitants of the Friendly Isles. See *Recherches Philosophiques sur les Américains*, tom. ii, p. 253, &c.

to wood and water, and have sought for a place to get these articles farther south, as the wind was now favourable for ranging along the coast. But their separation made it necessary for him to repair to the Sound, that being the place of rendezvous.

As they approached the land, they saw smoke in several places along the shore; a sure sign that the coast was inhabited. They continued to stand to the eastward all night, in hopes of meeting with the Adventure in the morning; but in this they were disappointed, and soon encountered another storm.

After a succession of calms and brisk gales, in tracing the coast, they discovered on the east side of Cape Teerawhitte, a new inlet they had never observed before, into which they entered and cast anchor.

Soon after they had anchored, several of the natives came off in their canoes; two from one shore, and one from the other. It required but little address to get three or four of them on board. These people were extravagantly fond of nails, above every other thing. To one man the captain gave two cocks and two hens, which he received with so much indifference, as gave little hopes he would take proper care of them.

They had not been at anchor here above two hours, before the wind veered to N. E. with which they weighed, and steered for the Sound, where they arrived just at dark, with most of their sails split.

The next morning, the 3d of November, the gale abated, and was succeeded by a few hours calm; after that a breeze sprung up at N. W. with which they weighed and ran up into Ship Cove,

Cove, where they did not find the Adventure, as was expected.

The first thing they did, after mooring the ship, was to unbend all the sails; there not being one but what wanted repair. In the afternoon, they gave orders for all the empty water casks to be landed, and tents to be set up for the sail-makers, coopers, and others, whose business made it necessary for them to be on shore. The next day, they began to caulk the ship's sides and decks, to overhaul her rigging, repair the sails, cut wood for fuel, and set up the smith's forge to repair the iron work; all of which were absolutely necessary.

Here they saw the youngest of the two sows Captain Furneaux had put on shore in Cannibal Cove, when they were last here; it was lame of one of its hind legs, otherwise in good case, and very tame. If they understood these people right, the boar and other sow were also taken away and separated, but not killed. They were likewise told, that the two goats they had put on shore up the sound, had been killed. Thus, all their endeavours to stock this country with useful animals were likely to be frustrated, by the very people they meant to serve. The gardens had fared somewhat better. Every thing in them, except the potatoes, they had left entirely to nature, who had acted her part so well, that they found most articles in a flourishing state; a proof that the winter must have been mild. The potatoes had most of them been dug up; some, however, still remained, and were growing; and, it is probable, they will never be out of the ground.

Next morning, the captain sent over to the cove, where the natives resided, to haul the seine;

and took with him a boar and a young sow, two cocks and two hens, they had brought from the isles. These he gave to the natives, being persuaded they would take proper care of them, by their keeping Captain Furneaux's sow near five months. When they were purchasing fish of these people, they shewed a great inclination to pick pockets, and to take away the fish with one hand, which they had just sold or bartered with the other. This evil one of the chiefs undertook to remove, and with fury in his eyes, made a shew of keeping the people at a proper distance. The captain says, "I applauded his conduct, but at the same time kept so good a look out, as to detect him in picking my pocket of a handkerchief, which I suffered him to put in his bosom before I seemed to know any thing of the matter, and then told him what I had lost. He seemed quite ignorant and innocent, till I took it from him; and then he put it off with a laugh, acting his part with so much address, that it was hardly possible for me to be angry with him; so that we remained good friends, and he accompanied me on board to dinner." About that time, they were visited by several strangers in four or five canoes. These new-comers took up their quarters in a cove near the tents; but very early the next morning, moved off with six small water casks, and with them all the people they found here on their arrival. This precipitate retreat of these last, they supposed, was owing to the theft the others had committed. They left behind them some of their dogs, and the boar that had been given them the day before, which the captain now took back again, as he had not another. The casks were the least loss felt by these

these people leaving them; while they remained they were generally well supplied with fish, at a small expence.

In unpacking the bread, four thousand two hundred and ninety-two pounds they found totally unfit to eat, and about three thousand pounds more could only be eaten by people in their situation.

The 15th being a pleasant morning, a party went over to East Bay, and climbed one of the hills, which overlooked the eastern part of the strait, in order to look for the Adventure. They had a fatiguing walk to little purpose; for when they came to the summit, they found the eastern horizon so foggy, that they could not see above two miles. Mr. Forster, who was one of the party, profited by this excursion, in collecting some new plants. They now began to despair of seeing the Adventure any more, and were totally at a loss to conceive what had befallen her.

Very early in the morning of the 22d, they were visited by a number of the natives, in four or five canoes, very few of whom they had seen before. They brought with them various articles, which they bartered. At first, the exchanges were very much in the sailors favour, till an old man, who was no stranger, came and assisted his countrymen with his advice; which, in a moment, turned the trade above a thousand per cent. against them.

After these people were gone, the captain took three sows and a boar, two cocks and two hens, which he landed in the bottom of the West Bay; carrying them a little way into the woods, where he left them with as much food as would serve them ten or twelve days. This was done with a

view of keeping them in the woods, lest they should come down to the shore in search of food, and be discovered by the natives.

Having now put the ship in a condition for sea, and to encounter the southern latitudes, the tents were struck, and every thing got on board.

The boatswain, with a party of men, being in the woods cutting broom, some of them found a private hut of the natives, in which was deposited most of the treasure they had received from them, as well as some other articles of their own. Complaint was soon made by the natives, that some articles had been carried off, and they particularly charged one man with the theft. The captain having ordered him to be punished before them, they went away seemingly satisfied; although they did not recover any of the things they had lost, nor could by any means find out what had become of them. It was ever a maxim with the captain to punish the least crimes of any of his people, committed against these uncivilized nations. Their robbing them with impunity is, by no means, a sufficient reason why the Europeans should treat these uninformed people in the same manner.

Calm light airs from the north, all day, on the 23d, hindered them from putting to sea, as intended. In the afternoon, some of the officers went on shore, to amuse themselves among the natives, where they saw the head and bowels of a youth, who had lately been killed, lying on the beach; and the heart stuck on a forked stick, which was fixed to the head of one of the largest canoes. One of the gentlemen bought the head, and brought it on board, where a piece of the flesh was broiled and eaten by one of the natives,
before

before all the officers and most of the men. Captain Cook was on shore at this time, but soon after returning on board, was informed of the above circumstances; and found the quarter-deck crowded with the natives, and the mangled head, or rather part of it, lying on the tafferal. The skull had been broken on the left side, just above the temples; and the remains of the face had all the appearance of a youth under twenty.

The sight of the head, and the relation of the above circumstances, struck him with horror, and filled his mind with indignation against these cannibals. Curiosity, however, got the better of his indignation, especially when he considered that it would avail but little; and being desirous of becoming an eye-witness of a fact which many doubted, he ordered a piece of the flesh to be broiled and brought to the quarter-deck, where one of these cannibals eat it with surprising avidity. This had such an effect on some of the sailors as to make them sick. This youth was killed in a skirmish between two parties.

That the New Zealanders are cannibals, can now no longer be doubted. The account given of this in Captain Cook's former voyage, being partly founded on circumstances, was, as he afterwards understood, discredited by many persons. Few consider what a savage man is in his natural state, and even after he is, in some degree, civilized!

On the 25th, they weighed, with a small breeze. The morning before they sailed, Captain Cook wrote a memorandum, setting forth the time he arrived, the day he sailed, the route he intended to take, and such other information as he thought necessary for Captain Furneaux, in case he should

put into the Sound; and buried it in a bottle under the root of a tree in the garden, in such a manner as must have been found by him, or any European who might put into the cove.

Every one being unanimously of opinion that the Adventure could neither be stranded on the coast, nor be in any of the harbours thereof, they gave up looking for her, and all thoughts of seeing her any more during the voyage; as no rendezvous was absolutely fixed upon after leaving New Zealand.

On quitting the coast, and consequently all hopes of their being joined by their consort, not a man was dejected, or thought the dangers they had yet to go through, were in the least increased by being alone.

On the 14th of December, they fell in with several large islands of ice, and, about noon, with a quantity of loose ice, through which they sailed. Grey albatrosses, blue peterels, pintadoes, and fulmers, were seen. As they advanced with a fresh gale at west, they found the number of ice islands increase fast, also a considerable quantity of loose ice. They tacked, stretched to the north, and soon got clear of it, but not before they had received several hard knocks from the larger pieces, which, with all their care, they could not avoid. After clearing one danger, they still had another to encounter; the weather remained foggy, and many large islands lay in their way. One they were very near falling aboard of; and if it had happened, this circumstance would never have been related. These difficulties determined them to get more to the north.

On the 21st, they very suddenly got in amongst a cluster of very large ice islands, and a vast quantity

tity of loose pieces ; and as the fog was exceedingly thick, it was with the utmost difficulty they wore clear of them.

On the 23d, the wind being pretty moderate, and the sea smooth, they brought to, at the outer edge of the ice, hoisted out two boats, and sent to take some up. The snow froze to the rigging as it fell, making the ropes like wires, and the sails like boards or plates of metal.

While they were taking up ice, they got two of the antarctic peterels. They are about the size of a large pigeon ; the feathers of the head, back, and part of the upper side of the wings, are of a light brown ; the belly and under side of the wings white ; the tail feathers are also white, but tipped with brown. These birds are fuller of feathers than any they had hitherto seen ; such care has Nature taken to clothe them, suitable to the climate in which they live.

On the 30th of January 1774, very early in the morning, they perceived the clouds, over the horizon to the south, to be of an unusual snow-white brightness, which they knew denoted their approach to field ice. Soon after they were close to its edge.

It extended east and west, far beyond the reach of their sight. In the situation they were in, just the southern half of the horizon was illuminated by the rays of light reflected from the ice, to a considerable height. Ninety-seven ice hills were distinctly seen within the field, besides those on the outside ; many of them very large, and looking like a ridge of mountains, rising one above another, till they were lost in the clouds. The outer or northern edge of this immense field was

was composed of loose or broken ice close packed together; so that it was not possible for any thing to enter it. This was about a mile broad; within which was solid ice in one continued, compact body. It was rather low and flat, except the hills, but seemed to increase in height to the south; in which direction it extended beyond their sight.

The captain says, "I will not say it was impossible any where to get farther to the south; but the attempting it would have been a dangerous and rash enterprise, and what I believe, no man in my situation would have thought of. I, who had ambition not only to go farther than any one had been before, but as far as it was possible for man to go, was not sorry at meeting with this interruption; as it, in some measure, relieved us; at least, shortened the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation of the southern polar regions. Since, therefore, we could not proceed one inch farther to the south, no other reason need be assigned for my tacking and standing to the north."

The captain now came to a resolution to proceed to the north, and to spend the ensuing winter within the tropic, if he met with no employment before he came there, as he was now well satisfied no continent was to be found in this ocean, but what must lie so far to the south as to be totally inaccessible on account of ice; and that if one should be found in the southern Atlantic Ocean, it would be necessary to have the whole summer before them to explore it.

They now steered north, inclining to the east, and in the evening they were overtaken by a furious storm, attended with snow and sleet. It
came

came so suddenly upon them, that before they could take in their sails, two of them were blown to pieces, and the others much damaged.

On the 25th, Captain Cook was taken ill of the bilious cholic, which was so violent as to confine him to his bed; so that the management of the ship was left to Mr. Cooper, the first officer, who conducted her much to his satisfaction. It was several days before the most dangerous symptoms of his disorder were removed; during which time Mr. Patten, the surgeon, was to him not only a skilful physician, but an affectionate nurse. When he began to recover, a favourite dog, belonging to Mr. Forster, fell a sacrifice to his tender stomach. They had no other fresh meat whatever on board; and the captain could eat of this flesh, as well as broth made of it, when he could taste nothing else. Thus he received nourishment and strength from food which would have made most people in Europe sick; so true it is, that necessity is governed by no law.

At eight o'clock in the morning on the 11th of March, land was seen from the mast-head, bearing west, about twelve leagues distant. They now tacked and endeavoured to get into what appeared to be a bay, on the west side of the point; but before this could be accomplished, night came upon them, and they stood on and off, under the land, till the next morning. This is called Easter Island, or Davis's Land.

Here a canoe, conducted by two men, came off. They brought with them a bunch of plantains, which they sent into the ship by a rope, and then they returned ashore. This gave the captain a good opinion of the islanders, and inspired them with

with hopes of getting some refreshments, of which they were in great want.

They continued to range along the coast, till they opened the northern point of the isle. While the ship was plying in, a native came on board. The first thing he did was to measure the length of the ship, by fathoming her from the tafferal to the stem; and as he counted the fathoms, they observed that he called the numbers by the same names that they do at Otaheite; nevertheless his language was nearly unintelligible to all of them.

Next morning the captain went ashore, accompanied by some of the gentlemen, to see what the island was likely to afford. They landed at a sandy beach, where some hundreds of the natives were assembled, and who were so impatient to see them, that many of them swam off to meet the boats. Not one of them had so much as a stick or weapon of any sort in his hand. After distributing a few trinkets amongst them, they made signs for something to eat; on which they brought down a few potatoes, plantains, and sugar canes, and exchanged them for nails, looking-glasses, and pieces of cloth.

They presently discovered that they were as expert thieves, and as tricking in their exchanges, as any people they had yet met with. It was with some difficulty they could keep their hats on their heads; but hardly possible to keep any thing in their pockets, not even what themselves had sold; for they would watch every opportunity to snatch it from them, so that they sometimes bought the same thing two or three times over, and after all did not get it.

The

The country appeared quite barren and without wood; there were, nevertheless, several plantations of potatoes, plantains, and sugar-canes; they also saw some fowls, and found a well of brackish water. The ship was now brought to an anchor, about a mile from the nearest shore.

The captain was obliged to content himself with remaining at the landing-place among the natives, as he was not yet quite recovered. They had a pretty brisk trade with them for potatoes, which they observed they dug out of an adjoining plantation; but this traffic, which was very advantageous to them, was soon put a stop to, by the owner (as they supposed) of the plantation coming down, and driving all the people out of it. By this they concluded, that he had been robbed of his property, and that they were not less scrupulous of stealing from one another, than from them, on whom they practised every little fraud they could think on, and generally with success; for they had no sooner detected them in one, than they found out another. A party who had been sent out in the morning to view the country, now returned. They had not proceeded far, before a middle-aged man, punctured from head to foot, and his face painted with a sort of white pigment, appeared with a spear in his hand, and walked along-side of them, making signs to his countrymen to keep at a distance, and not to molest them.—When he had pretty well effected this, he hoisted a piece of white cloth on his spear, placed himself in the front, and led the way, with this ensign of peace.

On the east side, near the sea, they met with three platforms of stone work, or rather the ruins
of

of them. On each had stood four large statues*, but they were all fallen down from two of them, and also one from the third; all except one, were broken by the fall, or in some measure defaced. Mr. Wales measured this one, and found it to be fifteen feet in length, and six feet broad over the shoulders. Each statue had on its head a large cylindric stone of a red colour, wrought perfectly round. The one they measured, which was not by far the largest, was fifty-two inches high, and sixty-six in diameter. In some the upper corner of the cylinder was taken off in a sort of concave quarter round; but in others the cylinder was entire.

Beyond this they came to the most fertile part of the island they saw, it being interspersed with plantations of potatoes, sugar-canes, and plantain-trees; but they could find no water, except what the natives twice or thrice brought them, which, though brackish and stinking, was rendered acceptable, by the extremity of their thirst. They also passed some huts, the owners of which met them with roasted potatoes and sugar-canes; but at the very time some were relieving the thirsty and hungry, there were others who endeavoured to steal from them the very things which had been given them. At last, to prevent worse consequences, they were obliged to fire a load of small shot at one who was so audacious as to snatch the bag which contained every thing they carried with them. The shot hit him on the back, on which he dropped the bag, ran a little way, and then fell; but he afterwards got up and walked, and what became of him they knew not, nor

* See the voyage of Roggewein.

whether he was much wounded. This affair occasioned some delay, and drew the natives together: they presently saw the man who had hitherto led the way, and one or two more, coming running towards them; but, instead of stopping when they came up, they continued to run round them, repeating in a kind manner, a few words, until they set forwards again. Then their old guide hoisted his flag, leading the way as before, and none ever attempted to steal from them the whole day afterwards.

Towards the eastern end of the island, they met with a well whose water was perfectly fresh, being considerably above the level of the sea; but it was dirty, owing to the filthiness or cleanliness (call it which you will) of the natives, who never go to drink without washing themselves all over as soon as they have done; and if ever so many of them are together, the first leaps right into the middle of the hole, drinks, and washes himself without the least ceremony; after which another takes his place and does the same.

They observed that this side of the island was full of those gigantic statues before mentioned; some placed in groupes on platforms of masonry; others single, fixed only in the earth, and that not deep; and these latter are, in general, much larger than the others. Having measured one, which had fallen down, they found it very near twenty-seven feet long, and upwards of eight feet over the breast or shoulders; and yet this appeared considerably short of the size of one they saw standing: its shade, a little past two o'clock, being sufficient to shelter all the party, consisting of near thirty persons, from the rays of the sun.

They saw not an animal of any sort, and but very few birds; nor indeed any thing which can induce ships that are not in the utmost distress to touch at this island.

The captain determined to leave the island the next morning, since nothing was to be obtained that could make it worth his while to stay longer.

The produce of this island is sweet potatoes, yams, tarra or eddy root, plantains, and sugar-canes, all pretty good, the potatoes especially, which are the best of the kind they ever tasted. They have a few tame fowls, such as cocks and hens, small, but well tasted. The coast seemed not to abound with fish; at least they could catch none with hook and line, and it was but very little they saw amongst the natives.

The inhabitants of this island do not seem to exceed six or seven hundred souls, and above two-thirds of those they saw were males. They either have but few females among them, or else many were restrained from making their appearance.

In general the people of this isle are a slender race. They did not see a man that would measure six feet; so far are they from being giants, as one of the authors of Roggewein's voyage asserts. They are brisk and active, have good features, and not disagreeable countenances, are friendly and hospitable to strangers, but as much addicted to pilfering as any of their neighbours.

The women's clothing is a piece or two of quilted cloth, about six feet by four, or a mat. One piece wrapped round their loins, and another over their shoulders, make a complete dress. But the men, for the most part, are in a manner naked, wearing nothing but a slip of cloth betwixt their legs, each end of which is fastened to
2 a cord

a cord or belt they wear round the waist. The Otaheitean cloth, or indeed any sort, was much valued by them.

As harmless and friendly as these people seem to be, they are not without offensive weapons, such as short wooden clubs and spears.

Their houses are low miserable huts, constructed by setting sticks upright in the ground, at six or eight feet distance, then bending them towards each other, and tying them together, at the top, forming thereby a kind of Gothic arch. The whole is thatched over with leaves of sugar-cane. The door-way is in the middle of one side, formed like a porch, and so low and narrow, as just to admit a man to enter upon all fours.

The gigantic statues are not, in Captain Cook's opinion, looked upon as idols by the present inhabitants, whatever they might have been in the days of the Dutch; at least, he saw nothing that could induce him to think so. On the contrary, he rather supposes that they are burying places for certain tribes or families.

On the 16th of March they stood out to sea, and having now a steady settled trade-wind, and pleasant weather, the forge was ordered to be set up, to repair and make various necessary articles in the iron way.

On the 7th of April they saw an isle, which, as it was a new discovery, they named Hood's Island, after the young gentleman who first saw it; the second was that of St. Pedro; the third, La Dominica; and the fourth, St. Christina. They ranged the S.E. coast of La Dominica, without seeing the least signs of anchorage. Some canoes put off from these places, and followed them down the coast.

At length, having come before the port they were in search of, they cast anchor. This was no sooner done, than about thirty or forty of the natives came off in ten or twelve canoes; but it required some address to get them along-side. At last a hatchet and some spike-nails, induced the people in one canoe to come under the quarter-gallery; after which all the others put along-side, and having exchanged some bread-fruit, and fish, for small nails, retired on shore.

Very early next morning, the natives visited them again in much greater numbers than before; bringing with them bread fruit, plantains, and one pig, all of which they exchanged. But in this traffic they would frequently keep their goods and make no return, till at last the captain was obliged to fire a musket ball over one man who had several times served them in this manner; after which they dealt more fairly, and soon after several of them came on board. As the captain was going in a boat, to look for a more convenient place to moor the ship in, he observed too many of the natives on board, and advised the officers to be on their guard. He had hardly got into the boat, before he was told they had stolen one of the iron stanchions, and were making off with it. He ordered them to fire over the canoe; but the natives made too much noise for him to be heard; and the unhappy thief was killed at the third shot.

At this unhappy accident, all the natives retired with precipitation. The captain followed them into the bay, and prevailed upon the people in one canoe to come along-side the boat, and receive some nails, and other things, which he gave them. One would have thought that the natives,
by

by this time, would have been so sensible of the effect of firearms, as not to have provoked them to fire upon them any more; but the event proved otherwise. For the boat had no sooner left the kedge anchor, than two men in the canoe put off from the shore, took hold of the buoy rope, and attempted to drag it ashore, little considering what was fast to it. The captain ordered a musket to be fired at them. The ball fell short, and they took not the least notice of it; but a second having passed over them, they let go the buoy, and made for the shore. This was the last shot they had occasion to fire at any of them while they lay at this place. It probably had more effect than killing the man, by shewing them that they were not safe at any distance.

On the 10th, early in the morning, some people from more distant parts came in canoes alongside, and sold them some pigs; so that they had now sufficient to give the crew a fresh meal. After dinner the captain went on shore, and collected eighteen pigs.

Next morning he went down to the same place where he had been the preceding evening; but instead of getting pigs, as he expected, found the scene quite changed. The nails, and other things, they were mad after but the evening before, they now despised. The reason was, several of the young gentlemen having landed the preceding day, had given away in exchange various articles which the people had not seen before, and which took with them more than nails or more useful iron tools. Trade being thus stopped, the captain prepared to leave this place, and go where their wants might be effectually relieved; for after having been nineteen weeks at sea, and living

all the time on salt diet, they could not but want some refreshments; yet they had not one sick man on board, owing to the many antiscorbutic articles they had, and to the great attention of the surgeon.

April the 11th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, they weighed. They had now but little wind, and that very variable, with showers of rain.

The Marquesas, which they had just left, were discovered by Mendana, a Spaniard, and from him obtained the general name they now bear. They are five in number, viz. La Magdalena, St. Pedro, La Dominica, Santa Christina, and Hood's Island, which is the northernmost; La Dominica is the largest.

The inhabitants of these islands, collectively, are without exception the finest race of people in this sea. For fine shape and regular features, they perhaps surpass all other nations. Nevertheless, the affinity of their language to that spoken in Otaheite and the Society Isles, shew that they are of the same nation. Oedidee could converse with them tolerably well; and it was easy to see, that their language was nearly the same.

The men, for the most part, have nothing to cover their nakedness, except the Marra, as it is called at Otaheite; which is a slip of cloth passed round the waist and betwixt the legs. This simple dress is quite sufficient for the climate, and answers every purpose modesty requires. The dress of the women is a piece of cloth, wrapped round the loins like a petticoat, which reaches down below the middle of the leg, and a loose mantle over their shoulders.

In

In the article of eating, these people are, by no means, so cleanly as the Otaheiteans. They are likewise dirty in their cookery. The captain says, he saw them make a batter of fruit and roots, diluted with water, in a vessel that was loaded with dirt, and out of which the hogs had been but that moment eating, without giving it the least washing, or even washing their hands, which were equally dirty; and when he expressed dislike, was laughed at.

Hogs are the only quadrupeds they saw; and cocks and hens were the only tame fowls. However, the woods seemed to abound with small birds of a very beautiful plumage, and fine notes.

With a fine easterly wind they steered till the 17th, when land was seen bearing W. half N. which, upon a nearer approach, they found to be a string of low islets, connected together by a reef of coral rocks.

As they steered along the coast, the natives appeared in several places, armed with long spears and clubs, and some were got together on one side of the creek. The captain sent two boats well armed, ashore, under the command of Lieutenant Cooper, with a view of having some intercourse with them. They saw them land without the least opposition. Some little time after, however, observing forty or fifty natives, all armed, coming towards the boats, they stood close in shore, in order to be ready to support their people in case of an attack. But nothing of this kind happened; and soon after the boats returned aboard, when Mr Cooper informed the captain that, on his landing, only a few of the natives met him on the beach, but there were many in the skirts of the woods, with spears in their hands.

The

The presents he made them were received with great coolness, which plainly shewed they were unwelcome visitors. They brought aboard five dogs, which seemed to be in plenty there. They saw no fruit but cocoa-nuts, of which they got by exchanges, two dozen.

This island, which is called by the inhabitants Tiookea, was discovered and visited by Commodore Byron. It has something of an oval shape, and is about ten leagues in circuit.

On the 18th, at day-break, they wore down to another isle which they had in sight to the westward, which they reached by eight o'clock, and ranged the S.E. side at one mile from shore. These must be the same islands to which Commodore Byron gave the name of George's Islands.

It cannot be determined, with any degree of certainty, whether this groupe of isles be any of those discovered by the Dutch navigators, or no; this part of the ocean is so strewn with those low isles, that a navigator cannot proceed with too much caution.

They made the high land of Otaheite on the 21st of April, and at eight o'clock the next morning anchored in Matavai Bay. This was no sooner known to the natives, than many of them made them a visit, and expressed not a little joy at seeing them again.

On the 24th, Otoo the king, and several other chiefs, with a train of attendants, paid them a visit, and brought them, as presents, ten or a dozen large hogs, besides fruits. The captain, knowing how much it was his interest to make this man his friend, met him at the tents, and conducted him and his friend on board, where they
said

staid dinner, after which they were dismissed with suitable presents, and highly pleased with the reception they had met with.

They now found these people were building a great number of large canoes, and houses of every kind; people living in spacious habitations, who had not a place to shelter themselves in eight months before; several large hogs about every house; and every other sign of a rising state.

Judging from these favourable circumstances that they should not mend themselves by removing to another island, the captain resolved to make some stay.

In the morning of the 26th, the captain went down to Oparree, accompanied by some of the officers and gentlemen, to pay Otoo a visit. As they drew near, they observed a number of large canoes in motion; but were surpris'd, when they arrived, to see upwards of three hundred ranged in order, for some distance, along the shore, all completely equipped and manned, besides a vast number of armed men upon the shore. So unexpected an armament collected together in their neighbourhood, in the space of one night, gave rise to various conjectures.

The vessels of war consisted of one hundred and sixty large double canoes, very well equipped, manned, and armed. The chiefs, and all those on the fighting stages, were dressed in their war habits; that is, in a vast quantity of cloth, turbans, breast-plates, and helmets. The vessels were decorated with flags and streamers, so that the whole made a grand and noble appearance, such as they had never before seen in this sea, and what no one would have expected. Their instruments of war were clubs, spears, and stones. Besides the
vessels

vessels of war, there were one hundred and seventy sail of smaller double canoes, all with a little house upon them, and rigged with a mast and sail, which the war canoes had not. These were designed for transports and victuallers ; for in the war canoes was no sort of provisions whatever. In these three hundred and thirty vessels there were no less than seven thousand seven hundred and sixty men.

Tupia informed them, when they were first here, that the whole island raised only between six and seven thousand men ; but they now saw two districts only, raise that number.

They had not been long gone from Oparree, where at that time they missed Otoo, before the whole fleet was in motion, to the westward, whence it came. When they got to Matavai, they were told that this fleet was part of the armament intended to go against Eimeo, whose chief had thrown off the yoke of Otaheite, and assumed an independency.

In the morning of the 27th of April, the captain received a present from a chief named Towha, consisting of two large hogs and some fruit, sent by two of his servants, who had orders not to receive any thing in return ; nor would they when offered them. Soon after, he went down to Oparree in his boat, where having found both this chief and the king, after a short stay, he brought them both on board to dinner, together with Tarevato, the king's younger brother, and Tee. As soon as they drew near the ship, the admiral, who had never seen one before, began to express much surprise at so new a sight. He was conducted all over the ship, every part of which he viewed with great attention. On this occasion Otoo was the principal

principal shew-man; for, by this time, he was well acquainted with the different parts of the ship. Soon after, the king and his attendants went away also. Captain Cook had been urged to assist them against Tiarabou, but to their solicitations he gave no encouragement.

On the 28th, one of the natives attempting to steal a water-cask from the watering place, he was caught in the act, sent on board, and put in irons; in which situation Otoo and the other chiefs saw him. Having made known his crime to them, Otoo begged he might be set at liberty. This the captain refused, telling him, that since he punished his people, when they committed the least offence against the natives, it was but just this man should be punished also. Accordingly, he ordered the man to be carried on shore to the tents; and having expostulated with Otoo on the conduct of his people in general; telling him, that neither he, nor any of his people, took any thing from them, without first paying for it: he added, that the punishing this offender would be the means of saving the lives of others of his people, by deterring them from committing crimes of this nature. With these and other arguments, which he pretty well understood, he seemed satisfied, and only desired the man might not be *Mat-terou* (or killed). The captain then ordered the crowd, which was very great, to be kept at a proper distance, and in the presence of them all, ordered the fellow two dozen of lashes with a cat-of-nine-tails, which he bore with great firmness, and was then set at liberty. After this the natives were going away; but Towha stepped forth, called them back, and harangued them for near half an hour. His speech consisted of short sentences,

tences, which were not well understood; but from what they could gather, he condemned their present conduct, and recommended a different one for the future. The gratefulness of his action, and the attention with which he was heard, bespoke him a great orator.

Otoo said not one word. As soon as Towha had ended his speech, the captain ordered the marines to go through their exercise, and to load and fire in volleys with ball; and as they were very quick in their manœuvres, it is easier to conceive than to describe the amazement the natives were under the whole time.

This being over, the chiefs took leave and retired with all their attendants, scarcely more pleased than frightened at what they had seen.

On going ashore in the morning of the 7th, they found Otoo at the tents, and took the opportunity to ask his leave to cut down some trees for fuel, which he readily granted. The captain told him he should cut down no trees that bore any fruit. He was pleased with this declaration, and told it aloud several times to the people about them.

The following night all their friendly connections received an interruption, through the negligence of one of the sentinels on shore. He having either slept or quitted his post, gave one of the natives an opportunity to carry off his musket. The first news the captain heard of it was from Tee, whom Otoo had sent on board for that purpose. They were not well enough acquainted with their language to understand all Tee's story; but they understood enough to know that something had happened which had alarmed the king. In order, therefore, to be fully informed,
1 the

the captain went ashore with Tee. As soon as they landed, he was informed of the whole by the sergeant who commanded the party. The natives were all alarmed, and the most of them fled. Tee and the captain went to look for Otoo; and as they advanced, he endeavoured to allay the fears of the people, but at the same time insisted on the musket being restored. After travelling some distance into the country, Tee stopped all at once, and advised the captain to return, saying, that Otoo was gone to the mountains, and he would proceed and tell him that he (the captain) was still his friend. Tee also promised that he would use his endeavours to recover the musket.

The captain returned to the ship, and soon after he observed six large canoes coming round Point Venus. There being room for suspecting that some person belonging to these canoes had committed the theft, he came to a resolution to intercept them; and having put off in a boat for that purpose, gave orders for another to follow. One of the canoes, which was some distance ahead of the rest, came directly for the ship. He went along-side this, and was told that Otoo was then at the tents. Pleased with this news, he contradicted the orders he had given for intercepting the other canoes, thinking they might be coming on board also. But when he landed he was told that Otoo had not been there, nor knew they any thing of him. On looking behind him, he saw all the canoes making off in the greatest haste; even the one he had left along-side the ship had evaded going on board, and was making her escape. Vexed at being thus outwitted, he resolved to pursue them, and as he passed the ship, gave orders to send another boat for the same purpose.

purpose. Five out of six they took, and brought along-side; but the first, which acted the finesse so well, got clear off.

In one of the canoes they had taken, was a chief, a friend of Mr. Forster's, who had hitherto called himself an Earee, and would have been much offended if any one had called his title in question; also three women, his wife and daughter, and the mother of the late Toutaha. These, together with the canoes, the captain resolved to detain, and to send the chief to Otoo; thinking he would have weight enough with him to obtain the return of the musket, as his own property was at stake.

In the dusk of the evening it was brought to the tents, together with some other things they had lost, which they knew nothing of, by three men who had pursued the thief, and taken them from him. The captain knew not if they took this trouble of their own accord, or by order of Otoo. He rewarded them, and made no farther enquiry about it.

When the musket and other things were brought in, every one then present, or who came after, pretended to have had some hand in recovering them, and claimed a reward accordingly. But there was no one acted this farce so well as Nuno, a man of some note, and well known to the captain when he was here in 1769. This man came, with all the savage fury imaginable in his countenance, and a large club in his hand, with which he beat about him, in order to shew how he alone had killed the thief; when, at the same time, they all knew he had not been out of his house the whole time.

Things were now once more restored to their former state; and Otoo promised on his part, that, the next day, they should be supplied as usual.

They then returned with him to his proper residence at Oparree, and there took a view of some of his dockyards (for such they well deserved to be called) and large canoes; some lately built and others building; two of which were the largest they had ever seen, under that name. They now returned to the ship.

Otoo desiring to see some of the great guns fire from the ship, the captain ordered twelve to be shotted and fired toward the sea. As he had never seen a cannon fired before, the sight gave him as much pain as pleasure. In the evening, they entertained him with fire-works, which gave him great satisfaction. Thus ended all their differences.

As the most essential repairs of the ship were nearly finished, it was resolved to leave Otaheite in a few days; the captain accordingly ordered every thing to be got off from the shore, that the natives might see they were about to depart.

On the 12th, old Oberea, the woman who, when the Dolphin was here in 1767, was thought to be queen of the island, and whom they had not seen since 1769, paid them a visit, and brought a present of hogs and fruit. Soon after, came Otoo with great retinue, and a large quantity of provisions. The captain was pretty liberal in his returns, thinking it might be the last time he should see these good people, who had so liberally relieved their wants; and, in the evening, entertained them with fire-works.

On the 14th they saw a number of war canoes coming round the point of Oparree. Being desirous of having a nearer view of them, accompanied by many officers and gentlemen, they hastened down to Oparree, which they reached before all the canoes were landed, and had an opportunity of seeing in what manner they approached the shore. When they got before the place where they intended to land, they formed themselves into divisions, and then each division, one after the other, paddled in for the shore with all their might, in the most exact and regular manner. All their motions were observed with such quickness as clearly shewed them to be expert in their business. Otoo, who was present, caused some of their troops to go through their exercise on shore. Two parties first began with clubs, but this was over almost as soon as begun; so that they had no time to make observations. They then went to single combat, and exhibited the various methods of fighting with great alertness; parrying off the blows and pushes, which each combatant aimed at the other, with great dexterity. Their arms were clubs and spears; the latter they also use as darts. In fighting with the club, all blows intended to be given the legs, were evaded by leaping over it; and those intended for the head, by couching a little, and leaping on one side; thus the blow would fall to the ground.

Their treatment at this isle was such as had induced one of the gunner's mates to form a plan to remain at it; but he was discovered before he could effect his purpose. He was an Irishman by birth, and had sailed in the Dutch service. The captain picked him up at Batavia on his return from his former voyage, and he had been with him

him ever since. He never learnt that he had either friends or connections, to confine him to any particular part of the world. All nations were alike to him. Where then could such a man be more happy than at one of these isles? Where, in one of the finest climates in the world, he could enjoy not only the necessaries, but the luxuries of life, in ease and plenty.

The two goats which Captain Furneaux gave to Otoo when they were last here, seemed to promise fair for answering the end for which they were put on shore. The ewe soon after had two female kids, which were now so far grown as to be nearly ready to propagate; and the old ewe was again with kid. The people seemed to be very fond of them, and they to like their situation as well; for they were in excellent condition. From this circumstance it may be hoped that, in a few years, they will have some to spare to their neighbours; and, by that means, they may in time spread over all the isles in this ocean. The sheep which they left, died soon after, excepting one, which they understood was yet alive. They have also furnished them with a stock of cats; no less than twenty having been given away at this isle.

In the afternoon, on the 15th of May, they anchored in O'Wharre Harbour, in the island of Huaheine, when Oree, the chief, brought a hog and other articles to the captain, who in return invited him and his friends to dinner.

In the evening of the 17th, some of the gentlemen went to a dramatic entertainment given by Oree. The piece represented a girl as running away with them from Otaheite; which was in some degree true; as a young woman had taken

a passage with them down to Ulietea, and happened now to be present at the representation of her own adventures; which had such an effect upon her, that it was with great difficulty the gentlemen could prevail upon her to see the play out, or to refrain from tears while it was acting.

Some of the petty officers, who had leave to go into the country for their amusement, took two of the natives with them to be their guides, and to carry their bags, containing nails, hatchets, &c. the current cash they traded with here; which the fellows made off with in the following artful manner. The gentlemen had with them two muskets for shooting birds. After a shower of rain, their guides pointed out some for them to shoot. One of the muskets having missed fire several times, and the other having gone off, the instant the fellows saw themselves secure from both, they ran away, leaving the gentlemen gazing after them with so much surprise, that no one had presence of mind to pursue them.

Early in the morning of the 23d they unmoored and put to sea. Oree, the chief, was the last man who went out of the ship. At parting, the captain told him they should see each other no more, at which he wept, and said, "Let your sons come, we will treat them well." Oree is a good man in the utmost sense of the word; but many of the people are far from being of that disposition, and seem to take advantage of his old age.

During their stay here they got bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts in abundance, but not hogs enough; and yet it did not appear that they were scarce in the isle. It must, however, be allowed, that

that the number they took away, when last here, must have thinned them greatly, and at the same time, stocked the isle with our articles.

As soon as they were clear of the harbour, they made sail, and stood over for the south end of Ulietea, where they dropt anchor the next day.

On the 25th a party went ashore to pay the chief a visit, and make the customary present. At their first entering his house, they were met by four or five old women, weeping and lamenting, as it were, most bitterly, and at the same time cutting their heads with instruments made of sharks teeth, till the blood ran plentifully down their faces and on their shoulders. What was still worse, they were obliged to submit to the embraces of these old hags, and by that means were all besmeared with blood. This ceremony being over, they went out, washed themselves, and immediately after appeared as cheerful as any of the company. The captain made his presents, and after some little stay, returned on board.

On the 27th they were entertained with a play, called Mididij Harramy, which signifies the Child is coming.—It concluded with the representation of a woman in labour, acted by a set of great brawny fellows, one of whom at last brought forth a strapping boy, about six feet high, who ran about the stage, dragging after him a large wisp of straw, which hung by a string from his middle. They had an opportunity of seeing this acted another time, when it was observed, that the moment they had got hold of the fellow who represented the child, they flattened or pressed his nose. From this they judged, that they do so by their children when born, which may be the reason

reason why all in general have flat noses. This part of the play, from its newness, and the ludicrous manner in which it was performed, gave them, the first time they saw it, some entertainment, and caused a loud laugh, which might be the reason why they acted it afterwards. But this, like all their other pieces, could entertain them no more than once.

On the 30th one of the chiefs made the captain a present of two pigs; he invited the donor to dinner, and ordered one of the pigs to be killed and dressed, and attended himself to the first part of the operation, which was as follows: they strangled the hog, which was done by three men; the hog being placed on his back, two of them laid a pretty strong stick across his throat, and pressed with all their weight on each end; the third man held his hind legs, kept him on his back, and plugged up his fundament with grass, to prevent any air from passing or repassing that way. In this manner they held him for about ten minutes before he was quite dead. The hog weighed about fifty pounds. It was baked in their usual manner. It eat well, and had an excellent flavour.

The captain having fixed on the 4th of June, his majesty's birth day, for sailing, Oreo, the chief, and his whole family, came on board, to take their last farewell, accompanied by Oo-oo-rou, the Earee de hi, and Boha the Earee of Otaha, and several of their friends. None came empty; but Oo-oo-rou brought a pretty large present, this being his first and only visit. The captain distributed amongst them almost every thing he had left. The very hospitable manner in which he had ever been received by these people, had endeared

deared them to him, and given them a just title to every thing in his power to grant.

Oreo pressed him to return; when the captain declined making any promises on that head, he asked the name of his Morai (burying-place). As strange a question as this was, he hesitated not a moment to tell him Stepney; the parish in which he lived when in London. He was requested to repeat it several times over till they could pronounce it; then, Stepney Morai no Toote was echoed through a hundred mouths at once. What greater proof could they have of these people esteeming them as friends, than their wishing to remember them even beyond the grave? They had been repeatedly told that they should see them no more; they then wanted to know where they were to mingle with their parent dust.

As they could not promise, or even suppose, that more English ships would be sent to those isles, their faithful companion, Oedidee, chose to remain in his native country. But he left the ship with a regret fully demonstrative of the esteem he had for them. Just as Oedidee was going out of the ship, he asked the captain to Tatou some Parou for him, in order to shew the commanders of other ships which might stop here. He complied with his request, gave him a certificate of the time he had been with them, and recommended him to the notice of those who might touch at the island after them.

Nature is exceedingly kind to these islands; and the natives, copying her bounty, are equally liberal; contributing plentifully and cheerfully to the wants of navigators. On leaving the harbour, they fired a salute in honour of the day.

Nothing

Nothing particular happened for more than a week.

On the 16th, just after sun-rise, land was seen from the top-mast head. They immediately steered for it, and found it to be an island, composed of five or six woody islots, connected together by sand-banks and breakers, inclosing a lake, into which they could see no entrance. The captain looked upon this as a new discovery, and named it Palmerston Island, in honour of Lord Palmerston, one of the lords of the admiralty.

On the 20th they saw land; and as they drew nearer, found it to be an island of considerable extent. Perceiving some people on the shore, and landing seeming to be easy, they hoisted out two boats, with which they put off to the land, accompanied by some of the officers and gentlemen.

Friendly signs were made to the natives, which were answered by menaces. All endeavours to bring them to a parley, were to no purpose; for they advanced with the ferocity of wild boars, and threw their darts. Two or three muskets, discharged in the air, did not hinder one of them from advancing still farther, and throwing another dart, which passed close over the captain's shoulder. His temerity would have cost him his life, had not the captain's musket missed fire.

The conduct and aspect of these islanders, occasioned the captain's naming it Savages Island. They seemed to be stout well made men, were naked, except round the waists, and some of them had their faces, breast, and thighs, painted black.

On the 26th of June they arrived off the coast of Rotterdam. Before they had well got to an anchor, the natives came off from all parts in canoes,

noes,

noes, bringing with them yams and shaddocks, which they exchanged for small nails and old rags. Early in the morning, the captain went ashore, with Mr. Gilbert, to look for fresh water, and were received with great courtesy by the natives. After they had distributed some presents amongst them, he asked for water, and was conducted to a brackish pond of it, about three-fourths of a mile from the landing-place; which he supposed to be the same that Tasman watered at. In the mean time, the people in the boat had laden her with fruit and roots, which the natives had brought down, and exchanged for nails and beads. In the afternoon, the surgeon was robbed of his gun, by a fellow who ran off with it, and would have stripped him, as he imagined, had he not presented a tooth-pick case, which the natives probably thought was a little gun. As soon as the captain heard of this, he went to the place where the robbery was committed, but took no steps to recover it; in this he acknowledges he was wrong; as it encouraged farther aggressions.

Early in the morning of the 28th, Lieutenant Clerke, with the master and fourteen or fifteen men, went on shore in the launch for water. She was no sooner landed than the natives gathered about her, behaving in so rude a manner, that the officers were in some doubt if they should land the casks; however, they ventured, and, with difficulty, got them filled, and into the boat again. While thus employed, Mr. Clerke's gun was snatched from him, and carried off; as were also some of the cooper's tools, and other articles. All this was done, as it were, by stealth; for they laid hold of nothing by main force. The captain
landed

landed just as the launch was ready to put off, and the natives, who were pretty numerous on the beach, as soon as they saw him, fled; so that he suspected something had happened. However, he prevailed on many to stay, being informed of all the preceding circumstances, he quickly came to a resolution to oblige them to make restitution; and for this purpose, ordered all the marines to be armed, and sent on shore. He then sent all the boats off but one, with which he staid, having a good many of the natives about him, who behaved with their usual courtesy; but he made them so sensible of his intention, that long before the mariners came, Mr. Clerke's musket was brought; but they used many excuses to divert him from insisting on the surgeon's. At length Mr. Edgumbe arriving, with the marines, this alarmed them so much, that some fled. Only one person was wounded, before the other musket was brought, and laid down at his feet. That moment he ordered the same canoes he had seized to be restored, to shew them on what account they were detained.

On returning to go on board, he found a good many people collected together, from whom they understood that the man he had fired at was dead. This story the captain treated as improbable, and addressed a man, who seemed of some consequence, for the restitution of a cooper's adze they had lost in the morning. He immediately sent away two men, as he thought, for it; but he soon found they had greatly mistaken each other; for instead of the adze, they brought the wounded man, stretched out on a board, and laid him down by him, to all appearance dead. He was much moved at the sight; but soon discovered that
he

he was only wounded in the hand and thigh. He, therefore, sent for the surgeon to dress his wounds, which were not dangerous. In the mean time, he addressed several people for the adze; particularly an elderly woman, who had always a great deal to say to him from his first landing; but on this occasion she gave her tongue full scope. The captain understood but little of her eloquence; but when she found he was determined, she and three or four more women went away; and soon after the adze was brought him, but he saw her no more. This he was sorry for, as he wished to make her a present, in return for the part she had taken in all their transactions, private as well as public; for, the first time he landed, this old lady presented to him a girl, giving him to understand she was at his service; and it was with some difficulty he could excuse himself from accepting this tempting offer; nor did he escape the sneers of her conductor for his refusal.

After leaving Rotterdam, or Anamocka, on the 30th they saw the summit of Amattafoa, but not clear enough to determine, with certainty, whether there was a volcano or no; but every thing they could see concurred to make them believe there was.

As the captain intended to get to the south, in order to explore the land which might lie there, they continued to ply between the isle of Lepers and Aurora; and on the 19th of July, the last-mentioned isle bore south, distant twenty miles.

At day break, on the 21st, they found themselves before the channel that divides Whitsuntide Island from the South Land, which is above two leagues over. Having sent two armed boats

to sound, and look for anchorage, they soon followed.

Next morning early, a good many of the natives came round them, some in canoes, and others swimming. The captain soon prevailed on one to come on board; which he no sooner did, than he was followed by more than he desired; so that not only the deck, but rigging, was presently filled with them. He took four into the cabin, and gave them various articles, which they shewed to those in the canoes, and seemed much pleased with their reception. While he was thus making friends with those in the cabin, an accident happened that threw all into confusion, but in the end proved advantageous. A fellow in a canoe having been refused admittance into one of the boats that lay along-side, bent his bow to shoot a poisoned arrow at the boat-keeper. Some of his countrymen prevented his doing it that instant, and gave time to acquaint the captain with it. The fellow, however, seemed resolved, and directed his bow again to the boat-keeper; but, on the captain calling to him, pointed it at him. Having a musket in his hand loaded with small shot, he gave him the contents. This staggered him for a moment, but did not prevent him from holding his bow still in the attitude of shooting. Another discharge of the same nature made him drop it. At this time, some began to shoot arrows on the other side. A musket discharged in the air had no effect; but a four pound shot fired over their heads, sent them off in the utmost confusion.

These people set no value on nails, or any sort of iron tools; nor indeed on any thing they had. They

They would, now and then, exchange an arrow for a piece of cloth ; but very seldom would part with a bow.

Being unwilling to lose the benefit of the moon-light nights, which now happened, they weighed on the 23d, and proceeded out of the harbour.

When the natives saw them under sail, they came off in their canoes, making exchanges with more confidence than before, and giving such extraordinary proofs of their honesty as surprised them. As the ship, at first, had fresh way through the water, several of them dropped astern after they had received goods, and before they had time to deliver theirs in return. Instead of taking advantage of this, they used their utmost efforts to get up with them, and to deliver what they had already been paid for. Pieces of cloth and marble paper were in most esteem with them ; but edge-tools, nails, and beads, they seemed to disregard.

Had they made a longer stay, they might soon have been upon good terms with this ape-like nation. For, in general, they were the most ugly, ill-proportioned people they ever saw, and in every respect different from any they had met with in this sea. They are a very dark-coloured and rather diminutive race, with long heads, flat faces, and monkey countenances. Their hair, mostly black or brown, is short and curly ; but not quite so soft and woolly as that of a negroe. Their beards are very strong, crisp, and bushy, and generally black and short. But what most adds to their deformity, is a belt or cord which they wear round the waist, and tie so tight over the belly, that the shape of their bodies is not un-
Z 2 like

like that of an over-grown pismire. The men go quite naked, except a piece of cloth or leaf used as a wrapper.

They saw but few women, and they were not less ugly than the men; their heads, faces, and shoulders are painted red; they wear a kind of petticoat; and some of them had something over their shoulders like a bag, in which they carry their children. None of them came off to the ship, and they generally kept at a distance when the ship's people were on shore. Their ornaments are ear-rings made of tortoise-shell, and bracelets. Round the right wrist they wear hogs tusks, bent circular, and rings made of shells; and round their left, a round piece of wood, which they judged was to ward off the bow-string. The bridge of the nose is pierced, in which they wear a piece of white stone, about an inch and a half long, formed like a bow. As signs of friendship they present a green branch, and sprinkle water with the hand over the head.

Their weapons are clubs, spears, and bows and arrows. The two former are made of hard or iron-wood. Their bows are about four feet long, made of a stick split down the middle, and are not circular, but bent more at one end than the other. The arrows, which are a sort of reeds, are sometimes armed with a long sharp point, made of hard wood, and sometimes with a very hard point made of bone; and these points are all covered with a substance which they took for poison. Indeed, the people themselves confirmed their suspicions, by making signs to them not to touch the point, and giving them to understand, that if they were pricked by them they would die.

The people of Mallicollo seemed to be a quite different nation from any they had yet met with, and speak a different language. Of about eighty words, which Mr. Forster collected, hardly one bears any affinity to the language spoken in any other island or place they had ever been at. The letter R is used in many of their words; and frequently two or three being joined together, such words were found difficult to pronounce. The captain observed, that they could pronounce most of the English words with great ease. They express their admiration by hissing like a goose.

To judge of the country by the little they saw of it, it must be fertile; but their fruits are not so good as those of the Society or Friendly Isles. They left them a dog and a bitch; and there is no doubt they will be taken care of, as they were very fond of them.

The harbour, which is situated on the N. E. side of Mallicollo, the captain named Port Sandwich; and it is so sheltered, that no winds can disturb a ship at anchor there. Another great advantage is, that the vessel can be brought so near the shore, as to cover the people, who may be at work upon it.

Soon after they got to sea, they stood over for Ambrym. On the 24th they reached an island near Apee, about four leagues in circuit; it is remarkable by having three high peaked hills upon it, by which it has obtained that name. They now steered to the east; and having weathered Threehills, stood for a groupe of small isles which lie off the S. E. point of Apee. These were called Shepherd's Isles, in honour of Dr. Shepherd, plumian professor of astronomy at Cambridge.

It should have been remarked, that the night before they came out of Port Sandwich, two red-dish fish, about the size of large bream, and not unlike them, were caught with hook and line. On these fish most of the officers, and some of the petty-officers, dined the next day. The night following, every one who had eaten of them was seized with violent pains in the head and bones, attended with a scorching heat all over the skin, and numbness in the joints. There remained no doubt that this was occasioned by the fish being of a poisonous nature, and having communicated its bad effects to all who partook of them; even to the hogs and dogs. One of the former died about sixteen hours after; it was not long before one of the latter shared the same fate; and it was a week or ten days before all the gentlemen recovered. These must have been the same sort of fish mentioned by Quiros, under the name of pargos, which poisoned the crews of his ships, so that it was some time before they recovered; and they would doubtless have been in the same situation, had more of them been eaten.

Continuing their course to the south, they drew near the southern lands, which they found to consist of one large island, whose southern and western extremities extended beyond their sight, and three or four smaller ones, lying off its north side. The two northernmost are much the largest, have a good height, and lie in the direction of E. by S. and W. by N. from each other, distant two leagues. They named the one Montagu, and the other Hinchinbrook, and the large island Sandwich, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich.

As they passed Hinchinbrook Isle, several people came down to the sea-side, and by signs, seemed

seemed to invite them ashore. Some were also seen on Sandwich Island, which exhibited a most delightful prospect, being spotted with woods and lawns, agreeably diversified over the whole surface. It hath a gentle slope from the hills, which are of a moderate height, down to the sea-coast. This is low, and guarded by a chain of breakers, so that there is no approaching it at this part.

On the 3d of August, they found themselves abreast a lofty promontory; and early next morning, the captain went, with two boats, to examine the coast, to look for a proper landing-place, wood, and water. At this time the natives began to assemble on the shore, and by signs invited them to land. The captain went first to a small beach, where he found no good landing. Some of the natives who were there, offered to haul the boats over the breakers to the sandy beach, which was thought a friendly offer, but they had reason afterwards to alter their opinion. They put in to the shore in two or three places, but not liking the situation, did not land. By this time the natives conceived what they wanted, as they directed the boat round a rocky point, where, on a fine sandy beach, the captain stepped out of the boat without wetting a foot, in the face of a vast multitude, with only a green branch in his hand. They received him with great courtesy and politeness; and would retire back from the boat on his making the least motion with his hand. A man, whom he took to be a chief, seeing this, made them form a semicircle round the boat's bow, and beat such as attempted to break through this order. This man he loaded with presents, giving likewise to others, and asked by signs for fresh water, in hopes of seeing where they

they got it. The chief immediately sent a man for some, who ran to a house, and presently returned with a little in a bamboo; so that he gained but little information by this. He next asked, by the same means, for something to eat; and they as readily brought him a yam and some cocoa-nuts.

In short, he was charmed with their behaviour; and the only thing which could give the least suspicion was, that most of them were armed with clubs, spears, darts, bows and arrows. For this reason the captain kept his eye continually upon the chief, and watched his looks as well as his actions. He made many signs to haul the boat upon the shore, and at last slipped into the crowd, where he observed him speak to several people, and then return, repeating signs to haul the boat up, and hesitating a good deal before he would receive some spike-nails which were then offered him. This made him suspect something was intended, and immediately he stepped into the boat, telling them by signs that he should soon return. But they were not for parting so soon, and now attempted by force, what they could not obtain by gentler means.

As they were putting off the boat, they laid hold of the gang-board, and unhooked it off the boat's stern. But as they did not take it away, it was thought this had been done by accident, and he ordered the boat in again, to take it up. Then the natives hooked it over the boat's stem, and attempted to haul her ashore; others at the same time, snatched the oars out of the people's hands. On pointing a musket at them, they, in some measure, desisted, but returned in an instant seemingly determined to effect their purpose. At
the

the head of this party was the chief. Signs and threats having no effect, their own safety became the only consideration ; and yet the captain was unwilling to fire on the multitude, and resolved to make the chief alone fall a victim to his own treachery ; but his musket, at this critical moment, missed fire. Whatever idea they might have formed of their arms, the natives must now have looked upon them as childish weapons, and began to let them see how much better theirs were, by throwing stones and darts, and by shooting arrows. This made it absolutely necessary to give orders to fire. The first discharge threw them into confusion ; but a second was hardly sufficient to drive them off the beach. Four lay, to all appearance, dead on the shore ; but two of them afterwards crawled into the bushes. Happy it was for these people, that not half the muskets would go off, otherwise many more must have fallen. One sailor was wounded in the cheek with a dart, the point of which was as thick as a little finger, and yet it entered above two inches ; which shews that it must have come with great force. An arrow struck Mr. Gilbert's naked breast, from some distance ; for it hardly penetrated the skin. These arrows were pointed with hard wood.

As soon as they got on board, the captain ordered the anchor to be weighed. While this was doing, several people appeared on the low rocky point, displaying two oars they had lost in the scuffle. This was supposed a sign of submission ; and of their wanting to give them the oars. He, nevertheless, fired a four pound shot at them, to let them see the effect of their great guns. The ball fell short, but frightened them so much,
that

that none were seen afterwards; and they left the oars standing up against the bushes.

These islanders seemed to be a different race from those of Mallicollo, and spoke a different language. They are of the middle size, have a good shape, and tolerable features. Their colour is very dark, and they paint their faces, some with black, and others with red pigment. They saw a few women, who were very ordinary; they wore a kind of petticoat made of palm leaves, or some plant like it. But the men, like those of Mallicollo, were in a manner naked; having only the belt about the waist, and the piece of cloth, or leaf, used as a wrapper.

In the night of the 5th of August, they saw a volcano, which they observed to throw up vast quantities of fire and smoke, with a rumbling noise heard at a great distance. They now made sail for the island whence it appeared, and presently after discovered a small inlet, which had the appearance of being a good harbour. The wind left them as soon as they were within the entrance, and obliged them to drop an anchor in four fathoms water. After this, the boats were sent to sound.

Many of the natives now got together in parties, on several parts of the shore, all armed. Some swam off to them, others came in canoes. At first they were shy, and kept at the distance of a stone's throw; they grew insensibly bolder, and at last, came under their stern, and made some exchanges. The people in one of the first canoes, after coming as near as they durst, threw towards them some cocoa-nuts. The captain went into a boat and picked them up, giving them

them in return some cloth and other articles. This induced others to come under the stern, and along-side, where their behaviour was insolent and daring. They wanted to carry off every thing within their reach ; they got hold of the fly of the ensign, and would have torn it from the staff. A few muskets fired in the air had no effect ; but a four pounder frightened them so much, that they quitted their canoes that instant, and took to the water. But as soon as they found themselves unhurt, they got again into their canoes, gave them some halloos, flourished their weapons, and returned once more to the buoys. This put them to the expence of a few musketoon balls, which had the desired effect, without killing any of them.

Towards the evening, the captain landed at the head of the harbour, with a strong party of men, without any opposition being made by a great number of the natives, who were assembled in two parties, the one on the right, the other on the left, all armed. After distributing to the old people (for they could distinguish no chief,) and some others, presents of cloth, medals, &c. he ordered two casks to be filled with water out of a pond, about twenty paces behind the landing-place, giving the natives to understand that this was one of the articles they wanted. Besides water, they got from them a few cocoa-nuts, which seemed to be in plenty on the trees ; but they could not be prevailed upon to part with any of their weapons. These they held in constant readiness, and in the proper attitudes of offence and defence, so that little was wanting to make them attack them. Their early re-embarking probably disconcerted their scheme, and after that they all retired.

While they were bringing the ship nearer the shore, to wood and water, they observed the natives assembling from all parts, and forming themselves into two parties, as they did the preceding evening, one on each side the landing-place, to the amount of some thousands, armed as before. A canoe, now and then, came off, bringing a few cocoa-nuts or plantains. The captain made an old man, who seemed well disposed, understand, by signs, that they were to lay aside their weapons, and throwing those which were in the canoe overboard, made him a present of a large piece of cloth. There was no doubt that he understood him, and made this request known to his countrymen; for as soon as he landed, they observed him go first to the one party, and then to the other; nor was he ever after seen with any thing like a weapon in his hand. After this, three fellows came in a canoe under the stern, one of them brandishing a club, with which he struck the ship's side, and committed other acts of defiance, but at last offered to exchange it for a string of beads, and some other trifles. These were sent down to him by a line; but the moment they were in his possession, he and his companions paddled off in all haste, without giving the club in return. This was what the captain expected, and, indeed, what he was not sorry for, as he wanted an opportunity to shew the multitude on shore the effect of their firearms, without materially hurting any of them. Having a fowling piece loaded with small shot, he gave the fellow the contents; and when they were above musket shot off, he ordered some of the musketoons to be fired, which alarmed them much. This transaction, however, seemed to make little

er no impression on the people there ; on the contrary, they began to halloo, and to make sport of it.

After mooring the ship, and placing the artillery in such a manner as to command the whole harbour, he embarked with the marines, and a party of seamen, in three boats, and rowed in for the shore. It hath been already mentioned, that the two divisions of the natives were drawn up on each side the landing-place. They had left a space between them of about thirty or forty yards, in which were laid, to the most advantage, a few small bunches of plantains, a yam, and two or three roots. The old man before mentioned, and and two more, invited them, by signs, to land ; but the former trap was still in their memory, which they were so near being caught in at the last island ; and this looked something like it. In short, every thing conspired to make them believe they meant to attack them as soon as they should be on shore. To prevent this, the captain ordered a musket to be fired over the party on the right, which was by far the strongest body ; but the alarm it gave them was momentary. In an instant they recovered themselves, and began to display their weapons. One fellow shewed his posteriors, in a manner which plainly conveyed his meaning. The ship now fired a few great guns, which presently dispersed them ; when the party landed, and marked out the limits, on the right and left, by a line. The natives came gradually to them, seemingly in a more friendly manner ; some even without their weapons, but by far the greatest part brought them ; and when they made signs to lay them down, they gave the English to understand, that they must lay down theirs first.

Thus all parties stood armed. Many seemed afraid to touch what belonged to the visitors, and they seemed to have no notion of exchanging one thing for another. The captain took the old man (whose name was now found to be Paowang) to the woods, and made him understand, he wanted to cut down some trees to take on board the ship. Paowang very readily gave his consent to cut wood; nor was there any one who made the least objection. Having landed again, they loaded the launch with water, and after making three hauls with the seine, caught upwards of three hundred pounds of mullet and other fish. It was some time before any of the natives appeared, and not above twenty or thirty at last, amongst whom was their trusty friend Paowang, who made them a present of a small pig, which was the only one they got at this isle.

During the night, the volcano, which was about four miles to the west, vomited up vast quantities of fire and smoke, as it had also done the night before; and the flames were seen to rise above the hill which lay between. At every eruption, it made a long rumbling noise, like that of thunder, or the blowing up of large mines. A heavy shower of rain, which fell at this time, seemed to increase it; and the wind blowing from the same quarter, the air was loaded with its ashes. It was a kind of fine sand, or stone, ground or burnt to powder, and was exceedingly troublesome to the eyes.

Early in the morning of the 7th, the natives began again to assemble near the watering-place, armed as usual, but not in such numbers as at first. On landing, they found many of the islanders much inclined to be friends, especially the
old

old people; on the other hand, most of the younger were daring and insolent, and obliged them to keep to their arms. The captain staid till he saw no disturbance was like to happen, and then returned to the ship, leaving the party under the command of Lieutenants Clerke and Edgcumbe.

On the 9th, Mr. Forster learnt from the people the proper name of the island, which they call Tanna. They gave them to understand, in a manner which they thought admitted of no doubt, that they eat human flesh, and that circumcision was practised among them. They began the subject of eating human flesh, of their own accord, by asking them if they did. One of the men employed in taking in ballast, scalded his fingers in removing a stone out of some water. This circumstance produced the discovery of several hot springs, at the foot of the cliff, and rather below high water-mark.

During the night of the 10th and 11th, the volcano was exceedingly troublesome, and made a terrible noise, throwing up prodigious columns of fire and smoke at each explosion, which happened every three or four minutes; and, at one time, great stones were seen high in the air. Mr. Forster and his party went up the hill, on the west side of the harbour, where he found three places whence smoke of a sulphureous smell issued, through cracks or fissures in the earth. The ground about these was exceedingly hot, and parched or burnt, and they seemed to keep pace with the volcano; for, at every explosion of the latter, the quantity of smoke or steam in these was greatly increased, and forced out so as to rise in small columns, which they saw from the
A a 2 ship,

ship, and had taken for common fires made by the natives. At the foot of this hill are the hot springs before mentioned.

In the afternoon Mr. Forster having began his botanical researches, on the other side of the harbour, fell in with Paowang's house, where he saw most of the articles the captain had given him, hanging on the adjoining trees and bushes, as if they were not worthy of being under his roof.

Several other parts of the hill emitted smoke or steam all the day, and the volcano was usually furious, insomuch that the air was loaded with its ashes. The rain which fell at this time, was a compound of water, sand, and earth; so that it properly might be called showers of mire. Whichever way the wind was, they were annoyed by the ashes, unless it blew very strong indeed from the opposite direction. Notwithstanding the natives seemed well enough satisfied with the few expeditions they had made in the neighbourhood, they were unwilling they should extend them farther. As a proof of this, some undertook to guide the gentlemen when they were in the country, to a place where they might see the mouth of the volcano. They very readily embraced the offer; and were conducted down to the harbour before they perceived the cheat.

In the morning of the 14th, a party of them set out for the country, to try if they could not get a nearer and better view of the volcano. The place affected by the heat was not above eight or ten yards square; and near it were some fig-trees, which spread their branches over a part of it, and seemed to like their situation. It was thought that this extraordinary heat was caused by the steam of boiling water, strongly impregnated
with

with sulphur. They proceeded up the hill through a country so covered with trees, shrubs, and plants, that the bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees, which seem to have been planted here by nature, were in a manner choaked up. Here and there they met with a house, some few people, and plantations. These latter they found in different states; some of long standing; others lately cleared; and some only clearing. Happening to turn out of the common path, they came into a plantation where they found a man at work, who, either out of good nature, or to get them the sooner out of his territories, undertook to be their guide. They followed him accordingly; but had not gone far before they came to the junction of two roads, in one of which stood another man with a sling and a stone, which he thought proper to lay down, when a musket was pointed at him. The attitude in which they found him, the ferocity appearing in his looks, and his behaviour after, convinced them that he meant to defend the path he stood in. He, in some measure, gained his point; for the guide took the other road, and they followed, but not without suspecting he was leading them out of the common way. The other man went with them likewise, counting them several times over, and hallooing, as they judged, for assistance; for they were presently joined by two or three more, among whom was a young woman with a club in her hand. By these people they were conducted to the brow of a hill, and shewn a road leading down to the harbour, which they wanted them to take. Not choosing to comply, they returned to that they had left, which they pursued alone, their guide refusing to go with them. After ascending ano-

ther ridge, as thickly covered with wood as those they had come over, they saw yet other hills between them and the volcano, which seemed as far off as at their first setting out. This discouraged them from proceeding farther, especially as they could get no one to be their guide. They therefore came to a resolution to return; and had but just put this in execution, when they met between twenty and thirty people, whom the fellow beforementioned had collected together, with a design, no doubt, to oppose their advancing into the country.

In the evening, Captain Cook took a walk with some of the gentlemen, into the country, on the other side of the harbour, where they had very different treatment from what they had met with in the morning. The people they now visited, among whom was their friend, Paowang, being better acquainted with them, shewed a readiness to oblige them in every thing in their power. They came to a village; it consisted of about twenty houses, the most of which need no other description than comparing them to the roof of a thatched house in England, taken off the walls and placed on the ground.—Some were open at both ends; others partly closed with reeds; and all were covered with palm thatch. A few of them were thirty or forty feet long, and fourteen or sixteen broad. This part of the island was well cultivated, open and airy; the plantations were laid out by line, abounding with plantains, sugar-canes, yams, and other roots, and stocked with fruit-trees.

On the 15th, having finished wooding and watering, a few hands only were on shore making brooms, the rest being employed on board, setting up the rigging, and putting the ship in a condition

tion for sea. Mr. Forster, in his botanical excursions, shot a pigeon, in the claw of which was a wild nutmeg. He took some pains to find the tree, but his endeavours were without success.

On the 17th, the captain went ashore, to pay a visit to an old chief, who was said to be king of the island. Paowang took little or no notice of him; the captain made him a present, after which he immediately went away, as if he had got all he came for. His name was Geogy, and they gave him the title of Areeke. He was very old, but had a merry, open countenance. He wore, round his waist, a broad red and white chequered belt; but this was hardly a mark of distinction.

Next day, the captain went again ashore, and found in the crowd old Geogy and a son of his, who soon made him understand that they wanted to dine with him; and accordingly he brought them, and two more, on board. When he got them on board, he went with them all over the ship, which they viewed with uncommon surprise and attention. They happened to have for their entertainment, a kind of pie or pudding made of plantains, and some sort of greens which they had got from one of the natives. On this, and on yams, they made a hearty dinner. In the afternoon, having made each of them a present of a hatchet, a spike-nail, and some medals, they were conducted on shore.

On the 19th, the captain finding a good number of the natives collected about the landing place as usual, he distributed among them all the articles he had with him, and then went on board for more. In less than an hour he returned, just as the people were getting some large logs into
the

the boat. At the same time four or five of the natives stepped forward to see what they were about, and as they did not allow them to come within certain limits, unless to pass along the beach, the sentry ordered them back, which they readily complied with. At this time, Captain Cook having his eyes fixed on them, he observed the sentry present his piece, and was just going to reprove him for it, but he was astonished beyond measure when the sentry fired, for he saw not the least cause.

At this outrage most of the people fled. As they ran off, he observed one man to fall, and he was immediately lifted up by two others, who took him into the water, washed his wound, and then led him off. Presently after, some came and described to the captain the nature of his wound, and he sent for the surgeon. As soon as he arrived, the captain went with him to the man, whom they found expiring. The ball had struck his left arm, which was much shattered, and then entered his body by the short ribs, one of which was broken. The rascal who fired, pretended that a man had laid an arrow across his bow, and was going to shoot at him; but this was no more than they had always done, and with no other view than to shew they were armed also, at least there was reason to think so, as they never went farther. This affair threw the natives into the utmost consternation; and the few that were prevailed on to stay, ran to the plantations and brought cocoa-nuts and other fruits, which they laid down at their feet. So soon were these daring people humbled! When the captain went on board to dinner, they all retired, and only a few appeared in the afternoon, among whom was Paowang,

Paowang. He promised to bring fruit the next morning, but their early departure put it out of his power.

On the 20th of August they put to sea. These people had not the least knowledge of iron and cloth could be of no use to people who go naked.

In this island hogs did not seem to be scarce; but they saw not many fowls. These are the only domestic animals they have. Land birds are not more numerous than at Otaheite, and the other islands; but they met with some small birds with a very beautiful plumage, which they had never seen before. There is as great a variety of trees and plants here, as at any island they touched at, where their botanists had time to examine. The captain never saw any sort of fishing tackle amongst them, nor any one out fishing, except on the shoals, or along the shores of the harbour, where they would watch to strike with a dart such fish as came within their reach; and in this way they were expert. They seemed much to admire the European manner of catching fish with the seine.

These people are of the middle size, rather slender than otherwise; the most of them have good features, and agreeable countenances. They never would put a hand to any work they were carrying on, which the people of the other islands used to delight in. They make the females do the most laborious work, as if they were pack horses. A woman has been seen in this island, carrying a large bundle on her back, or a child on her back and a bundle under her arm, and a fellow strutting before her with nothing but a club or spear, or some such thing.

The

The women are not beauties; but they are handsome enough for the men, and too handsome for the use that is made of them. Both sexes are of a very dark colour, but not black; nor have they the least characteristic of the negro about them. They use pigments of black, red, and brown, which they lay on, with a liberal hand, not only on the face, but on the neck, shoulders, and breast. The men wear nothing but a belt, and a wrapping leaf. The women have a kind of petticoat made of the filaments of the plantain tree, flax, or some such thing, which reaches below the knee. Both sexes wear ornaments, such as bracelets, ear-rings, necklaces, and amulets.

With darts they kill both birds and fish, and are excellent marksmen. They always throw with all their might, let the distance be what it will. Mr. Wales, speaking of their dexterity, says, "I must confess, I have been often led to think, the feats which Homer represents his heroes as performing with their spears, a little too much of the marvellous to be admitted into an heroic poem; I mean when confined within the strait stays of Aristotle. Nay, even so great an advocate for him as Mr. Pope, acknowledges them to be surprising. But since I have seen what these people can do with their wooden spears, and them badly pointed, and not of a very hard nature, I have not the least exception to any one passage in that great poet on this account. But, if I see fewer exceptions, I can find infinitely more beauties in him; as he has, I think, scarce an action, circumstance, or description of any kind whatever, relating to a spear, which I have not seen and recognized among these people; as their whirling motion, and whistling

ting noise, as they fly; their quivering motion, as they stick in the ground when they fall; their meditating their aim, when they are going to throw; and their shaking them in their hand as they go along."

As soon as the boats were hoisted in, they made sail, and stretched to the eastward. Nothing material occurred till September 4th, when looking S. E. the coast seemed to terminate in a high promontory, which the captain named Cape Colnet, after one of his midshipmen, who first discovered this land.

Some gaps or openings were seen on the 5th to lie all along the coast, whether they plied up. After running two leagues down the outside of the reef (for such it proved) they came before an opening that had the appearance of a good channel. They wanted to get on shore, to have an opportunity to observe an eclipse of the sun, which was soon to happen. With this view they hoisted out two armed boats, and sent them to sound the channel; ten or twelve large sailing canoes being then near them. They had observed them coming off from the shore all the morning, from different parts.

The boats having made a signal for a channel, they stood in. They had hardly got to an anchor, before they were surrounded by a great number of the natives, in sixteen or eighteen canoes, the most of whom were without any sort of weapons. At first they were shy of coming near the ship; but in a short time they prevailed on the people in one boat to get close enough to receive some presents. These they lowered down to them by a rope, to which, in return, they tied two fish that stunk intolerably. These mutual exchanges
bringing

bringing on a kind of confidence, two ventured on board the ship; and presently after, she was filled with them, and they had the company of several at dinner in the cabin. Like all the nations they had lately seen, the men were almost naked. They were curious in examining every part of the ship, which they viewed with uncommon attention. They had not the least knowledge of goats, hogs, dogs, or cats, and had not even a name for one of them. They seemed fond of large spike-nails and pieces of red cloth, or indeed any other colour; but red was their favourite.

After dinner, the captain went on shore with two armed boats, having with them one of the natives who had attached himself to him. They landed on a sandy beach before a vast number of people, who had got together with no other intent than to see them; for many of them had not a stick in their hands; consequently they were received with great courtesy, and with the surprise natural for people to express, at seeing men and things so new to them as they must be. The captain made presents to all those his new friend pointed out, who were either old men, or such as seemed to be of some note; but he took not the least notice of a few women who stood behind the crowd, keeping back the captain's hand when he was going to give them some beads and medals. Here they found a chief, whose name was Teabooma; and they had not been on shore above ten minutes, before he called for silence. Being instantly obeyed by every individual present, he made a short speech; and soon after another chief having called for silence, made a speech also. It was pleasing to see with what
attention

attention they were heard. Their speeches were composed of short sentences; to each of which two or three old men answered, by nodding their heads, and giving a kind of grunt, significant of approbation. It was impossible for them to know the purport of these speeches; but they had reason to think they were favourable to them, on whose account they doubtless were made.

The natives conducted them, upon enquiring for water, about two miles round the coast, to a little straggling village, near some mangroves; there they landed, and were shewn fresh water. The ground near this village was finely cultivated, being laid out in plantations of sugar-canes, plantains, yams, and other roots. They heard the crowing of cocks, but saw none. As they proceeded up the creek, Mr. Forster having shot a duck flying over their heads, which was the first use these people saw made of firearms, the native, whom Captain Cook distinguished by the name of his friend, begged to have it; and when he landed, told his countrymen in what manner it was killed. The day being far spent, they took leave of the people, and got on board a little after sun-set.

Next morning they were visited by some hundreds of the natives; so that before ten o'clock, their decks, and all other parts of the ship, were quite full. The captain's friend, who was of the number, brought him a few roots, but all the others came empty in respect to eatables. Some few had with them their arms, such as clubs and darts, which they exchanged for nails, pieces of cloth, &c. Next day Mr. Wales, accompanied by Lieutenant Clark, went to make preparations for ob-

serving the eclipse of the sun, which was to happen in the afternoon.

This afternoon a fish being struck by one of the natives near the watering place, the captain's clerk purchased it, and sent it to him after his return on board. It was of a new species, something like a sun-fish, with a large, long, ugly head. Having no suspicion of its being of a poisonous nature, they ordered it to be dressed for supper; but, very luckily, the operation of drawing and describing took up so much time, that it was too late, so that only the liver and roe were dressed, of which the two Mr. Forsters and the captain did but taste. About three o'clock in the morning, they all found themselves seized with an extraordinary weakness and numbness all over their limbs. The captain had almost lost the sense of feeling; nor could he distinguish between light and heavy bodies, of such as he had strength to move; a quart pot, full of water, and a feather being the same in his hand. They each of them took an emetic, and after that a sweat, which gave them much relief. In the morning, one of the pigs, which had eaten the entrails, was found dead. When the natives came on board and saw the fish hang up, they immediately gave them to understand it was not wholesome food, and expressed the utmost abhorrence of it; though no one was observed to do this when the fish was to be sold, or even immediately after it was purchased.

In the afternoon of the 8th, the captain received a message, acquainting him that Teabooma the chief was come, with a present consisting of a few yams and sugar-canes. In return, he sent him,
among

Among other articles, a dog and a bitch, both young, but nearly full grown. The dog was red and white, but the bitch was all red, or the colour of an English fox. The captain says, he mentions this, because they may prove the Adam and Eve of their species in that country.

Next morning early, Lieutenant Pickersgill and Mr. Gilbert were sent with the launch and cutter to explore the coast to the west. The two Mr. Forsters and the captain were confined on board, though much better, a good sweat having had a happy effect. In the afternoon, a man was seen, both ashore and along-side the ship, said to be as white as an European. From the account obtained of this circumstance, his whiteness did not proceed from hereditary descent, but from chance or some disease.

In the evening of the 11th, the boats returned, when the captain was informed, the cutter was near being lost, by suddenly filling with water, which obliged them to throw several things overboard, before they could free her and stop the leak she had sprung. From a fishing canoe, which they met coming in from the reefs, they got as much fish as they could eat; and they were received by Teabi, the chief of the isle of Balabea, with great courtesy. In order not to be too much crowded, they drew a line on the ground, and gave the natives to understand they were not to come within it. This restriction they observed; and one of them soon after turned it to his own advantage: for happening to have a few cocoa-nuts, which one of the sailors wanted to buy, and he was unwilling to part with, he walked off, and was followed by the man who wanted them. On seeing this he sat down on the sand,

made a circle round him, as he had seen them do, and signified that the other was not to come within it; which was accordingly observed.

In the afternoon of the 12th, the captain went on shore, and on a large tree, which stood close to the shore, near the watering place, had an inscription cut, setting forth the ship's name, date, &c. as a testimony of their being the first discoverers of this country. This being done, they took leave of the natives, and returned on board; when he ordered all the boats to be hoisted in, in order to be ready to put to sea in the morning.

The people of this island are strong, robust, active, and well-made; they are also courteous and friendly, and not in the least addicted to pilfering, which is more than can be said of any other nation in this sea. They are nearly of the same colour as the natives of Tanna, but have better features, more agreeable countenances, and are a much stouter race; a few being seen who measured six feet four inches. Their hair and beards are in general black. The former is very much frizzled; so that, at first sight, it appears like that of a negro. These rough heads most probably want frequent scratching; for which purpose they have a kind of comb made of sticks of hard wood, from seven to nine or ten inches long, and about the thickness of knitting needles. A number of these, seldom exceeding twenty, but generally fewer, are fastened together at one end, parallel to, and near one-tenth of an inch from each other. The other ends, which are a little pointed, will spread out or open like the sticks of a fan. These combs, or scratchers, for they serve both purposes, they always wear in their hair on one side of their head. Swelled and ulcerated
legs

legs and feet are common among the men, as also a swelling of the scrotum. It is not known whether this is occasioned by disease, or by the mode of applying the wrapper, which they use as at Tanna and Mallicollo. This is their only covering, and is made generally of the bark of a tree, but sometimes of leaves. The small pieces of cloth, paper, &c. which they got from them, were commonly applied to this use. Some had a kind of concave, cylindrical, stiff black cap, which appeared to be a great ornament among them, and they supposed was only worn by men of note, or warriors. A large sheet of strong paper, when they got one in exchange for any thing, was generally applied to this use.

Their houses, or at least most of them, are circular; something like a bee-hive, and full as close and warm. The entrance is by a small door, or long square hole, just big enough to admit a man bent double. In most of them they found two fire-places, and commonly a fire burning; and as there was no vent for the smoke but by the door, the whole house was both smoky and hot, insomuch that they, who were not used to such an atmosphere, could hardly endure it a moment.

They have no great variety of household utensils; earthen jars being the only article worth notice. Each family has, at least, one of them, in which they bake their roots, and perhaps their fish.

They subsist chiefly on roots and fish, and the bark of a tree, which also grows in the West Indies. This they roast, and are almost continually chewing. Water is their only liquor; at least, they never saw any other made use of. It seems

to be a country unable to support many inhabitants. Nature has been less bountiful to it, than to any other tropical island known in this sea. The greatest part of its surface, consists of barren rocky mountains.

Nevertheless, here are several plants, common to the eastern and northern islands, and even a species of the passion-flower, which has never before been known to grow wild any-where but in America. The botanists did not complain for want of employment at this place; every day bringing to light something new in botany or other branches of natural history.

All their endeavours to get the name of the whole island, proved ineffectual. Probably, it is too large for them to know by one name. Whenever they made this enquiry, they always gave them the name of some district or place, which they pointed to. Hence Captain Cook imagines that the country is divided into several districts, each governed by a chief; but they know nothing of the extent of his power. Balade was the name of the district they were at, and Teabooma the chief. Tea seems to be a title prefixed to the names of all, or most of their chiefs or great men. The captain was by one of their principal men called Tea Cook.

Their fishing implements are turtle nets, made of the filaments of the plantain tree twisted; and small hand nets, with very minute meshes, made of fine twine, and fish-gigs.

The women of this country, and likewise those of Tanna, are far more chaste than those of the most eastern islands. The captain says he never heard that one of his people obtained the least favour from any one of them.

Every

Every thing being in readiness to put to sea, at sun-rise, on the 13th of September, they weighed, and stood out for sea.

Nothing remarkable occurred till the the 28th in the evening, when two low islots were seen bearing W. by S. and as they were connected by breakers, which seemed to join those on their starboard, it became necessary to haul off, in order to get clear of them. Soon after more breakers appeared, extending from the low isles to a great distance.

They spent the night in making short boards, under the terrible apprehension, every moment, of falling on some of the many dangers which surrounded them.

Day-light shewed that their fears were not ill-founded, and that they had been in the most imminent danger, having had breakers continually under their lee, and at a very little distance from them. They owed their safety to the interposition of Providence, a good look out, and the very brisk manner in which the ship was managed.

They were now almost tired of a coast which they could no longer explore, but at the risk of losing the ship, and ruining the whole voyage.

The ship was at this time conducted by an officer placed at the mast-head; soon after, with great difficulty, they arrived within a mile of land, and were obliged to anchor in thirty-nine fathoms water; they then hoisted out a boat, in which the captain went ashore, accompanied by the botanists. Here they found several tall trees, which had been observed before at a considerable distance; they appeared to be a kind of spruce pine, very proper for spars, of which they were in want; after making this discovery, they hasten-
ed

ed on board, in order to have more time after dinner, when they landed again with two boats, to cut down such trees as were wanting.

The little isle upon which they landed, is a mere sand bank, not exceeding three-fourths of a mile in circuit, and on it, besides these pines, grew the Etos tree of Otaheite, and a variety of other trees, shrubs, and plants. These gave sufficient employment to the botanists, all the time they staid upon it, and occasioned the captain's calling it Botany Isle. Several fire-places, branches and leaves very little decayed, shewed that people had lately been on the isle. The hull of a canoe lay wrecked in the sand.

Having got ten or twelve small spars to make studding-sail booms, boats masts, &c. and night approaching, they returned with them on board.

The purpose for which they anchored under this isle being answered, it was necessary to consider what was next to be done. They had, from the top-mast head, taken a view of the sea around, and observed the whole, to the west, to be strewed with small islots, sand banks, and breakers, to the utmost extent of their horizon. This induced the captain to try to get without the shoals.

Next morning, at day-break, the 30th of September, they got under sail, and met with no occurrences worthy of remark for some days.

In the evening of the 8th of October, Mr. Cooper having struck a porpoise with a harpoon, it was necessary to bring to, and have two boats out, before they could kill it, and get it on board. It was six feet long; a female of that kind, which naturalists call dolphins of the ancients, and which differs from the other kind of porpoise in the head and jaw, having them long and pointed.

This

This had eighty-eight teeth in each jaw. The hallet and lean flesh were to them a feast. It was eaten roasted, broiled, and fried, first soaking it in warm water. Indeed, little art was wanting to make any thing fresh palatable to those who had been living so long on salt meat.

On the 10th, at day-break they discovered land, bearing S.W. which on a nearer approach they found to be an island of good height, and five leagues in circuit. It was named Norfolk Isle, in honour of the noble family of Howard. After dinner a party embarked in two boats, and landed on the island without any difficulty, behind some large rocks, which lined part of the coast.

They found it uninhabited, and were undoubtedly the first that ever set foot on it. They observed many trees and plants common at New Zealand; and, in particular, the flax plant, which is rather more luxuriant here than in any part of that country; but the chief produce is a sort of spruce pine, which grows in abundance, and to a large size, many of the trees being as thick, breast high, as two men could fathom, and exceedingly straight and tall. It resembles the Quebec pine. For about two hundred yards from the shore, the ground is covered so thick with shrubs and plants, as hardly to be penetrated farther inland. The woods were perfectly clear and free from underwood, and the soil seemed rich and deep.

They found the same kind of pigeons, parrots, and quarroquets, as in New Zealand, rails, and some small birds. The sea fowl breed undisturbed on the shores, and in the cliffs of the rocks.

On the isle is fresh water; and cabbage-palm, wood-forrel, sow-thistle, and samphire, abounding
in

in some places on the shore; they brought on board as much of each sort as the time they had to gather them would admit.

After leaving Norfolk Isle, they steered for New Zealand, intending to touch at Queen Charlotte's Sound, to refresh the crew, and put the ship in a condition to encounter the southern latitudes.

On the 17th, at day-break, they saw Mount Egmont, which was covered with everlasting snow. Their distance from the shore was about eight leagues.

On the 18th, they anchored before Ship Cove; and in the afternoon, the captain went into the cove, with the seine, to try to catch some fish. The first thing he did after landing, was to look for the bottle he left when last here, in which was the memorandum. It was taken away, but by whom it did not appear. Two hauls with the seine producing only four small fish, they in some measure made up for this deficiency, by shooting several birds.

Being little wind next morning, they weighed and warped the ship into the cove, and there moored. Here the forge was erected, and the ship and rigging repaired. The captain gave orders that vegetables should be boiled every morning with oat-meal and portable broth for breakfast, and with peas and broth every day for dinner for the whole crew, over and above their usual allowance of salt meat.

In the afternoon, as Mr. Wales was setting up his observatory, he discovered that several trees, which were standing when they last sailed from this place, had been cut down with saws and axes. It was therefore now no longer to be doubted

doubted, that the Adventure had been in this cove after they had left it.

Nothing remarkable happened till the 24th, when, in the morning, two canoes were seen coming down the sound; but as soon as they perceived the ship, they retired. After breakfast they went in a boat to look for them; and as they proceeded along the shore, they shot several birds. The report of the muskets gave notice of their approach; and the natives discovered themselves in Shag Cove, by hallooing to them. The moment they landed, they knew them. Joy then took place of fear; and the rest of the natives hurried out of the woods, and embraced them over and over again, leaping and skipping about like madmen; but it was observed that they would not suffer some women, whom they saw at a distance, to come near them. After they had made them presents of hatchets, knives, and what else they had with them, they gave in return a large quantity of fish, which they had just caught.

Next morning early, the inhabitants paid them a visit on board, and brought with them a quantity of fine fish, which they exchanged for Otaheitean cloth.

On the 28th a party went a shooting to West Bay, and came to the place where they left the hogs and fowls; but saw no vestiges of them, nor of any body having been there since. In the evening, they got on board with about a dozen and a half of wild fowls, shags, and sea-pies. The sportsmen who had been out in the woods near the ship, were more successful among the small birds.

On the 6th, their old friends having taken up their abode near them, one whose name was Pedro,

dro, (a man of some note) made the captain a present of a staff of honour, such as the chiefs generally carry. In return, he dressed him in a suit of old clothes, of which he was not a little proud. Having got this person, and another, into a communicative mood, he began to enquire of them if the Adventure had been there during his absence; and they gave them to understand, in a manner which admitted of no doubt, that, soon after they were gone, she arrived; that she staid between ten and twenty days, and had been gone ten months.

The 8th, they put two pigs, a boar, and a sow, on shore, in the cove next without Cannibal Cove; so that it is hardly possible all the methods the captain has taken to stock this country with these animals should fail.

On the 9th, the natives having brought a very large and seasonable supply of fish, the captain bestowed on Pedro a present of an empty oil-jar, which made him as happy as a prince.

In the afternoon, a party went on shore into one of the coves, where were two families of the natives variously employed; some sleeping, some making mats, others roasting fish and fire-roots, and one girl was heating of stones. As soon as the stones were hot, she took them out of the fire, and gave them to an old woman, who was sitting in the hut. She placed them in a heap, laid over them a handful of green celery, and over that a coarse mat, and then squatted herself down, on her heels, on the top of all; thus making a kind of Dutch warming-pan, on which she sat as close as a hare on her seat. The captain supposes it was intended to cure some disorder
the

she might have on her, which the steams arising from the green celery might be a specific for.

On the 10th of November, they took their farewell of New Zealand, and steered for Cape Campbell.

The captain's intention now was to cross this vast ocean, so as to pass over those parts which were left unexplored the preceding summer.

On Saturday the 17th of December they made the land, about six leagues distant. On this discovery, they wore and brought to, with the ship's head to the south; and having sounded, found seventy-five fathoms water, the bottom stone and shells. The land now before them could be no other than the west coast of Terra del Fuego, and near the west entrance of the Straights of Magalhaens.

This was the first run that had been made directly across this ocean, in a high southern latitude. The captain says he never made a passage, any where, of such length, where so few interesting circumstances occurred. For, the variation of the compass excepted, he met with nothing else worth notice. Here they took their leave of the South Pacific Ocean.

On the 18th of December, as they continued to range the coast, about two leagues distance, they passed a projecting point, which was called Cape Gloucester. It shews a round surface of considerable height, and has much the appearance of being an island, distant seventeen leagues from the Isle of Landfall.

On the 20th, at noon, they observed York Minster, then distant five leagues. At ten o'clock, a breeze springing up at E. by S. they took this opportunity to stand in for the land, to recruit
Vol. VI. C c their

their stock of wood and water, and take a view of the country.

Here was found plenty of wood and water, and they set about doing what was necessary to the ship, the outside of which was become very foul. The captain was now told of a melancholy accident which had befallen one of the marines. He had not been seen since eleven or twelve o'clock the preceding night. It was supposed that he had fallen overboard, out of the head, where he had been last seen, and was drowned.

On the 23d, Mr. Pickersgill was sent in the cutter to explore the east side of the sound, with an intent to survey the island under which they were at anchor, and which the captain called Shag Island.

About seven in the evening he returned, and reported, that the land opposite to their station was an island which he had been round; that between it and the east head lay a cove, in which were many geese.

This information induced them to make up two shooting parties next day; Mr. Pickersgill and his associates going in the cutter, and the captain and the botanists in the pinnace. Mr. Pickersgill went in one direction, and the captain in another, and they had sport enough among the geese, whence this was denominated Goose Island. There being a high surf, they found great difficulty in landing, and very bad climbing over the rocks when they were landed; so that hundreds of the geese escaped, some into the sea, and others up into the land. They, however, by one means or other, got sixty-two, with which they returned on board all heartily tired; but the acquisition

quisition they had made overbalanced every other consideration, and they sat down with a good appetite to supper, on part of what the preceding day had produced. Mr. Pickersgill and his associates had got on board some time before with fourteen geese, so that they were able to make distribution to the whole crew, which was the more acceptable on account of the approaching festival; for had not Providence thus singularly provided for them, their Christmas cheer must have been salt beef and pork.

The next morning, the 25th, some of the natives paid them a visit. They are a little, ugly, half-starved, beardless race; not a tall person appeared amongst them. They were almost naked; their only clothing was a seal-skin. The women cover their nakedness with the flap of a seal-skin, but in other respects are clothed like the men. Two young children were seen at the breast entirely naked; thus they are inured from their infancy to cold and hardships. They had with them bows and arrows; and darts, or rather harpoons, made of bone, and fitted to a staff. They, and every they thing had, smelt most intolerably of train oil.

The women and children remained in their canoes. These were made of bark; and in each was a fire, over which the poor creatures huddled themselves. They likewise carry in their canoes large seal hides to shelter them when at sea, and to serve as coverings to their huts on shore; and occasionally to be used for sails.

The natives all retired before dinner; indeed no one invited them to stay. Their dirty persons, and the stench they carried about them, were enough to spoil the appetite of any European,

and that would have been a real disappointment, as the ship's company had not experienced such fare for some time. Roast and boiled geese and goose-pye, was a treat little known to them, and they had yet some Madeira wine left, which was the only article of provision that was mended by keeping; so that their friends in England did not, perhaps, celebrate Christmas more cheerfully than they did. This was named Christmas Sound.

Next day the natives made another visit; and it being distressing to see them stand trembling and naked on the deck, the captain humanely gave them some baize and old canvases to cover themselves.

The refreshments to be got here are precarious, as they are chiefly wild fowl, and may probably never be found in such plenty as to supply the crew of a ship. They consist of geese, ducks, sea-pies, shags, and that kind of gull called Port Egmont hen. Here is a kind of duck, called by the sailors, race horses, on account of the great swiftness with which they run on the water; for they cannot fly, the wings being too short to support the body in the air. The geese too are much smaller than English tame geese, but eat as well. They have short black bills and yellow feet. The gander is all white; the female is spotted black and white, or grey, with a large white spot on each wing. The captain says, of all the nations he had seen, these people seem to be the most wretched. They are doomed to live in one of the most inhospitable climates in the world, without having sagacity enough to provide themselves with such conveniences as may render life, in some measure, more comfortable.

Barren

Barren as this country is, it abounds with a variety of unknown plants, and gave sufficient employment to Mr. Forster and his party.

On the 28th they weighed and stood out to sea, resuming their course to the east; and the next day, they passed Cape Horn, and entered the Southern Atlantic Ocean. It is the most southern extremity on a group of islands of unequal extent, lying before Nassau Bay, known by the name of Hermit Islands.

From Cape Horn, they stood over for Success Bay, assisted by the currents, which set to the north. Before this, they had hoisted their colours, and fired two guns; and soon after, they saw a smoke rise out of the woods, above the south point of the bay, which was supposed to be made by the natives. As soon as they got off the bay, Lieutenant Pickersgill went to see if any traces remained of the Adventure; but he saw not the least signs of any ship having been there lately. The captain had inscribed his ship's name on a card, which he nailed to a tree, at the place where the Endeavour watered.

In the morning, at three o'clock, they bore up for the east end of Staten Land, where they arrived next day in the afternoon.

After dinner they hoisted out three boats, and landed with a large party of men; some to kill seals; others to catch or kill birds, fish, or what came in their way. To find the former, it mattered not where they landed, for the whole shore was covered with them; and by the noise they made, one would have thought the island was stocked with cows and calves. On landing, they found they were a different animal from seals, but in shape and motion exactly resembling them.

them. The sailors called them lions, on account of the great resemblance the male has to that beast. Here were also the same kind of seals which they found in New Zealand, generally known by the name of sea-bears; at least they gave them that name. They were in general so tame, or rather stupid, as to suffer them to come near enough to knock them down with sticks; but the large ones were shot, not thinking it safe to approach them. They also found on the island, abundance of penguins and shags. Here were geese and ducks, but not many; birds of prey, and a few small birds. In the evening they returned on board with plenty of spoil.

Next day, being January the 1st, 1775, finding that nothing was wanting but a good harbour to make this a tolerable place for ships to refresh at, which chance or design might bring hither, Mr. Gilbert went over to Staten Land in the cutter, to look for a good harbour. The captain also sent two other boats, which returned laden with sea-lions, sea-bears, &c. The old lions and bears were killed chiefly for the sake of their blubber, or fat, to make oil of; for, except their harlets, which were tolerable, the flesh was too rank to be eaten with any degree of relish. But the young cubs were very palatable; and even the flesh of some of the old lionesses was not much amiss.

About ten o'clock, Mr. Gilbert returned from Staten Land, where he found a good port, situated three leagues to the westward of Cape St. John. It is almost two miles in length; in some places near a mile broad. On the island were sea-lions and seals, and such an innumerable quantity of gulls, as to darken the air when disturbed

turbed, and almost to suffocate the people with their dung. This they seemed to void in a way of defence, and it stunk worse than assafoetida. The day on which this port was discovered, occasioned the captain's calling it New-year's Harbour.

The sea-lions found here are not of that kind described, under the same name, by Lord Anson; but these would more properly deserve that appellation; the long hair, with which the back of the head, the neck, and shoulders, are covered, giving them greatly the air and appearance of a lion. The female is not half so big as the male, and is covered with a short hair, of an ash, or light dun colour. They live, as it were, in herds, on the rocks and near the sea-shore. As this was the time for engendering as well as bringing forth their young, they saw a male, with twenty or thirty females about him, and always very attentive to keep them all to himself, and beating off every other male who attempted to come into his flock. Others again had a less number; some no more than one or two.

The sea-bears are not so large, by far, as the lions, but rather larger than a common seal. They have none of that long hair which distinguishes the lion. Theirs is all of an equal length, and finer than that of the lion, something like an otter's, and the general colour is that of iron grey. This is the kind which the French call sea-wolves, and the English seals; they are, however, different from the seals in Europe and North America. The lions may too, without any great impropriety, be called overgrown seals; for they are all of the same species. It was not at all dangerous to go among them; for they either fled or
lay

lay still. The only danger was in going between them and the sea; for if they took fright at any thing, they would come down in such numbers, that, if you could not get out of their way, you would be run over.

The oceanic birds were gulls, tern, Port Egmont hens, and a large brown bird, of the size of an albatross, which Pernetty calls *quebranthahuef-fas*. The sailors called them Mother Cary's geese, and found them pretty good eating. The land birds were eagles, or hawks, bald-headed vultures, or what the seamen called turkey-buzzards, thrushes, and a few other small birds.

It is amazing to see how the different animals, which inhabit this place, are mutually reconciled. They seem to have entered into a league not to disturb each other's tranquillity. The sea-lions occupy most of the coast; the sea-bears take up their abode in the isle; the shags have post in the highest cliffs; the penguins fix their quarters where there is the most easy communication to and from the sea; and the other birds chuse more retired places. Captain Cook says, he has seen all these animals mix together like domestic cattle and poultry in a farm-yard, without one attempting to molest the other.

Having left the land in the evening of the 3d, they saw it again next morning, bearing west.

On the 14th, at nine o'clock in the morning, they descried an island of ice, as they then thought; but at noon were doubtful whether it was ice or land; it turned out to be the latter, and was in a manner wholly covered with snow.

On the 16th, they began to explore the northern coast, and next morning they made sail in for the land. As soon as they drew near the shore, hav-
ing

ing hoisted out a boat, the captain embarked in it, accompanied by Mr. Forster and his party, with a view of reconnoitring before they ventured in with the ship, which they afterwards declined, as the inner parts of the country were savage and horrible. The wild rocks raised their lofty summits, till they were lost in the clouds, and the valleys lay covered with everlasting snow. Not a tree was to be seen, or a shrub even big enough to make a tooth-pick. They found here nearly the same animals as in New-year's Harbour.

Since their arrival on this coast, the captain ordered, in addition to the common allowance, wheat to be boiled every morning for breakfast; but any kind of fresh meat was preferred by most on board to salt: for his part, he says, he was heartily tired of salt meat of every kind; and though the flesh of the penguins could scarcely vie with bullock's liver, its being fresh was sufficient to make it go down. They called the bay they had been in Possession Bay.

As soon as the boat was hoisted in, they made sail along the coast to the east, for the space of eleven or twelve leagues, to a projecting point, which obtained the name of Cape Saunders. Beyond this cape is a pretty large bay, which was named Cumberland Bay.

On the 20th they fell in with an island, which they named the Isle of Georgia, in honour of his majesty. It extends thirty-one leagues in length; and its greatest breadth is about ten leagues. It seems to abound with bays and harbours, the N.E. coast especially; but the vast quantity of ice coast renders them inaccessible the greatest part of the year.

From

From the 20th to the 27th they had a continuation of foggy weather. They now growing almost tired of high southern latitudes, where nothing was to be found but ice and thick fogs, stood to the east, when they soon fell in, all at once, with a vast number of large ice-islands, and a sea strewn with loose ice. For this reason they tacked and stood to the west, with the wind at north. The ice-islands, which at this time surrounded them, were nearly all of equal height, and shewed a flat even surface.

On the 1st of February, they got sight of a new coast. It proved a high promontory, which was named Cape Montagu, but prudence would not permit them to venture near the shore, where there was no anchorage, and where every port was blocked or filled up with ice; and the whole country, from the summits of the mountains down to the very brink of the cliffs which terminate the coast, covered, many fathoms thick, with everlasting snow.

It was now necessary to take a view of the land to the north, before they proceeded any farther to the east.

On the 3d they saw two isles. The day on which they were discovered, was the occasion of calling them Candlemas Isles. They were of no great extent, but of considerable height, and were covered with snow. On the 4th they resumed their course to the east. About noon they met with several ice-islands, and some loose ice, the weather continuing hazy, with snow and rain.

The risk run in exploring a coast, in these unknown and icy seas, is so very great, that no man, the captain says, will ever venture farther than he has done; and therefore the lands which may lie
to

to the south will never be explored. Thick fogs, snow storms, intense cold, and every other thing that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered; and these difficulties are greatly heightened, by the inexpressibly horrid aspect of the country; a country, doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth of the sun's rays, but to lie buried in everlasting snow and ice. The ports which may be on the coast, are, in a manner, wholly filled up with frozen snow of vast thickness; but if any should be so far open as to invite a ship into it, she would run a risk of being fixed there for ever, or of coming out in an ice island.

After such an explanation as this, the reader will not expect to find them much farther to the south. It was, however, not for want of inclination, but for other reasons. It would have been rashness to have risked all that had been done during the voyage, in discovering a coast, which, when discovered, would have answered no end whatever, or have been of the least use, either to navigation or geography; or indeed to any other science; and, besides all this, they were not now in a condition to undertake great things; nor indeed was there time, had they been ever so well provided.

These reasons induced the captain to alter his course to the east, with a very strong gale at north, attended with an exceedingly heavy fall of snow. The quantity which lodged in their sails was so great, that they were frequently obliged to throw the ship up in the wind to shake it out of them, otherwise neither they nor the ship could have supported the weight.

On the 10th, the weather became fair, but piercing cold, so that the water on deck was
1 frozen,

frozen, and at noon the mercury in the thermometer was no higher than thirty-four and a half.

On the 22d of February, as they were within two degrees of longitude from their route to the south, when they left the Cape of Good Hope, it was to no purpose to proceed any farther to the east under this parallel, knowing that no land could be there.

They had now made the circuit of the Southern Ocean in a high latitude, and traversed it in such a manner as to leave not the least room for the possibility of there being a continent, unless near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. By twice visiting the tropical sea, they had not only settled the situation of some old discoveries, but made there many new ones, and left very little more to be done in that part. Thus the intention of the voyage has, in every respect, been fully answered; the southern hemisphere sufficiently explored; and a final end put to the searching after a southern continent.

Their sails and rigging were so much worn, that something was giving way every hour; and they had nothing left, either to repair or replace them. Their provisions were in a state of decay, and yielded little nourishment, and they had been a long time without refreshments. The sailors indeed were yet healthy, and would have cheerfully gone wherever they were led; but they dreaded the scurvy laying hold of them, at a time when they had nothing left to remove it. It would however have been cruel to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were continually exposed to, longer than was absolutely necessary. Their behaviour, throughout the whole voyage, merited every indulgence which it was possible

to give them. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they shewed themselves capable of surmounting every difficulty and danger which came in their way, and never once looked either upon one or the other, as being at all heightened, by their separation from their consort, the Adventure.

On the 8th of March the mercury in the thermometer rose to sixty-one, and they found it necessary to put on lighter clothes.

On the 12th they put a boat in the water, and shot some albatrosses and peterels, which, at this time, were highly acceptable. Every one was now become impatient to get into port; this induced the captain to yield to the general wish, and to steer for the Cape of Good Hope. The captain now demanded of the officers and petty officers, the log-books and journals they had kept; which were delivered accordingly, and sealed up for the inspection of the admiralty. He also enjoined them, and the whole crew, not to divulge where they had been, till they had their lordships' permission so to do.

In the evening of the 17th they saw land about six leagues distant. Next day, having little or no wind, they hoisted out a boat, and sent on board a ship, which was about two leagues from them; but they were too impatient after news to regard the distance. Soon after three sail more appeared in sight to windward, one of which shewed English colours.

The boat returning, reported that they had visited a Dutch East Indiaman, whose captain very obligingly offered them sugar, arrack, and whatever he had to spare. They were told by some English seamen on board this ship, that the Ad-

venture had arrived at the Cape of Good Hope twelve months ago, and that the crew of one of her boats had been murdered and eaten by the people of New Zealand.

On the 19th the *True Briton*, Captain Broadly, from China, bore down to them. As this ship did not intend to touch at the Cape, the captain put a letter on board for the secretary of the admiralty.

The melancholy account which they had heard of the *Adventure* was now confirmed. From this ship they procured a parcel of old news-papers, which were new to them, and gave them some amusement; but these were the least favours they received from Captain Broadly. With a generosity peculiar to the commanders of the India Company's ships, he sent them fresh provisions, tea, and other articles, which were very acceptable; and deserve this public acknowledgment. In the afternoon they parted company. The *True Briton* stood out to sea, and they in for the land.

The next morning, being with them Wednesday the 22d, but with the people here Tuesday the 21st, they anchored in Table Bay, where they found several Dutch ships; some French; and the *Ceres*, Captain Newte, an English East India Company's ship, from China, bound directly to England, by whom they sent a copy of the preceding part of this journal, some charts, and other drawings, to the admiralty.

Before they had well got to an anchor, the captain dispatched an officer to acquaint the governor with their arrival, and to request the necessary stores and refreshments; which were readily granted.

The captain now learned that the Adventure had called here, on her return; and he found a letter here from Captain Furneaux, acquainting him with the loss of his boat, and of ten of his best men, in Queen Charlotte's Sound. He afterwards, on his arrival in England, put into Captain Cook's hands a complete narrative of his proceedings, from the time of their second and final separation; which we now detail, to complete the history of this voyage.

In October 1773, they were blown off the coast of New Zealand; when they parted company with the Resolution, and never saw her afterwards. They combated violent storms till the 6th of November; when, being to the north of Cape Palliser, they bore away for some bay to complete their water and wood, being in great want of both; having been at the allowance of one quart of water for some days past; and even that pittance could not be come at, above six or seven days longer. They anchored in Tolaga Bay. Wood and water are easily to be had. The natives here are the same as those at Charlotte Sound, but more numerous. In one of their canoes they observed the head of a woman lying in state, adorned with feathers, and other ornaments. It had the appearance of being alive; but, on examination, they found it dry, being preserved with every feature perfect, and kept as the relic of some deceased relation.

Having got about ten tuns of water, and some wood, they sailed for Charlotte Sound on the 12th; but violent weather prevented them from reaching it till the 30th. They saw nothing of the Resolution, and began to doubt her safety;

but on going ashore, they discerned the place where she had erected her tents ; and, on an old stump of a tree in the garden, observed these words cut out, “ Look underneath.” There they dug, and soon found a bottle, corked and waxed down, with a letter in it from Captain Cook, signifying their arrival on the 3d instant, and departure on the 24th, and that they intended spending a few days in the entrance of the Straights, to look for them.

They immediately set about the necessary repairs of the ship, which employed them till the 16th of December.

Next day, they sent their large cutter, with Mr. Rowe, a midshipman, and the boat's crew, to gather wild greens for the ship's company ; with orders to return that evening, as they intended to sail the next morning. But, on the boat's not returning the same evening, nor the next morning, the second lieutenant, Mr. Burney, in the launch, manned with the boat's crew and ten marines, went in search of her. Mr. Burney returned about eleven o'clock the same night, and informed them of a horrible scene indeed, which cannot be better described than in his own words.

“ On the 18th, we left the ship ; and having a light breeze in our favour, we soon got round Long Island. I examined every cove, on the larboard hand, as we went along, looking well all around with a telescope. At half past one, we stopped at a beach on the left hand side going up East Bay, to boil some victuals. Whilst we were cooking, I saw an Indian on the opposite shore, running along a beach to the head of the bay. Our meat being drest, we got into the boat
and

and put off; and, in a short time, arrived at the head of this reach, where we saw an Indian settlement.

“ As we drew near, some of the Indians came down on the rocks, and waved for us to be gone; but seeing we disregarded them, they altered their notes. Here we found six large canoes hauled up on the beach, most of them double ones, and a great many people. Leaving the boat's crew to guard the boat, I stepped ashore with the marines (the corporal and five men) and searched a good many of their houses; but found nothing to give me any suspicion. Coming down to the beach, one of the Indians had brought a bundle of hepatoes (long spears) but seeing I looked very earnestly at him, he put them on the ground, and walked about with seeming unconcern. Some of the people appearing to be frightened, I gave a looking-glass to one, and a large nail to another. From this place the bay ran, as nearly as I could guess, a good mile. I looked all around with the glass, but saw no boat, canoe, or any sign of inhabitant. I, therefore, contented myself with firing some guns, which I had done in every cove as I went along.

“ I now kept close to the east shore, and came to another settlement, where the Indians invited us ashore. I enquired of them about the boat, but they pretended ignorance. They appeared very friendly here, and sold us some fish. Within an hour after we left this place, in a small beach adjoining to Grass Cove, we saw a very large double canoe just hauled up, with two men and a dog. The men, on seeing us, left their canoe, and ran up into the woods. This gave me reason to suspect I should here get tidings of the

cutter. We went ashore, and searched the canoe, where we found one of the rullock-ports of the cutter, and some shoes, one of which was known to belong to Mr. Woodhouse, one of our midshipmen. One of the people, at the same time, brought me a piece of meat, which he took to be some of the salt meat belonging to the cutter's crew. On examining this, and smelling to it, I found it was fresh. Mr. Fannin (the master) who was with me, supposed it was dog's flesh, and I was of the same opinion; for I still doubted their being cannibals. But we were soon convinced by the most horrid and undeniable proof.

“ A great many baskets (about twenty) lying on the beach, tied up, we cut them open. Some were full of roasted flesh, and some of fern-root, which serves them for bread. On farther search, we found more shoes, and a hand, which we immediately knew to have belonged to Thomas Hill, one of our forecastle-men, it being marked T. H. with an Otaheite tattow-instrument. I went with some of the people a little way up the woods, but saw nothing else. Coming down again, there was a round spot, covered with fresh earth, about four feet diameter, where something had been buried. Having no spade, we began to dig with a cutlass; and in the mean time I launched the canoe with intent to destroy her; but seeing a great smoke ascending over the nearest hill, I got all the people into the boat, and made what haste I could to be with them before sun-set.

“ On opening the next bay, which was Grass Cove, we saw four canoes, and a great many people on the beach, who, on our approach, retreated to a small hill, within a ship's length of the
water

water side, where they stood talking to us. A large fire was on the top of the high land, beyond the woods, whence, all the way down the hill, the place was thronged like a fair. The savages on the little hill still kept hallooing, and making signs for us to land; however, as soon as we got close in, we all fired. The first volley did not seem to affect them much; but on the second, they began to scramble away as fast as they could, some of them howling. We continued firing as long as we could see the glimpse of any of them through the bushes. Amongst the Indians were two very stout men, who never offered to move till they found themselves forsaken by their companions; and then they marched away with great composure and deliberation, their pride not suffering them to run. One of them, however, got a fall, and either lay there, or crawled off on all fours. The other got clear, without any apparent hurt. I then landed with the marines, and Mr. Fannin staid to guard the boat.

“On the beach were two bundles of celery, which had been gathered for loading the cutter. A broken oar was stuck upright in the ground, to which the natives had tied their canoes; a proof that the attack had been made here. I then searched all along at the back of the beach, to see if the cutter was there. We found no boat, but instead of her, such a shocking scene of carnage and barbarity, as can never be mentioned or thought of but with horror; for the heads, hearts, and lungs of several of our people were seen lying on the beach; and at a little distance, the dogs gnawing their entrails.

“Whilst we remained almost stupified on the spot, Mr. Fannin called to us that he heard the savages

savages gathering together in the woods ; on which I returned to the boat, and hauling alongside the canoes, we demolished three of them. Whilst this was transacting, the fire on the top of the hill disappeared, and we could hear the Indians in the woods at high words ; I suppose quarrelling whether or no they should attack us, and try to save their canoes. It now grew dark, I, therefore, just stepped out, and looked once more behind the beach, to see if the cutter had been hauled up in the bushes ; but seeing nothing of her, returned and put off. Our whole force would have been barely sufficient to have gone up the hill ; and to have ventured with half (for half must have been left to guard the boat) would have been fool-hardiness.

“ As we opened the upper part of the sound, we saw a very large fire about three or four miles higher up, which formed a complete oval, reaching from the top of a hill down almost to the water side, the middle space being inclosed all round by the fire, like a hedge. I consulted with Mr. Fannin, and we were both of opinion, that we could expect to reap no other advantage than the poor satisfaction of killing some more of the savages.

“ Coming between two round islands, situated to the southward of East Bay, we imagined we heard somebody calling ; we lay on our oars and listened, but heard no more of it ; we hallooed several times, but to little purpose ; the poor souls were far enough out of hearing : and, indeed, I think it some comfort to reflect, that, in all probability, every man of them must have been killed on the spot.”

Thus

Thus far Mr. Burney's report ; and, to complete the account of this tragical transaction, it may not be unnecessary to mention that the people in the cutter were Mr. Rowe ; Mr. Woodhouse ; Francis Murphy, quarter-master ; William Facey, Thomas Hill, Michael Bell, and Edward Jones, forcastle-men ; John Cavenaugh and Thomas Milton, belonging to the after-guard ; and James Sevilley, the captain's man, being ten in all. Most of these were their very best seamen, the stoutest and most healthy people in the ship. Mr. Burney's party brought on board two hands, one belonging to Mr. Rowe, known by a hurt he had received on it ; the other to Thomas Hill, as before mentioned ; and the head of the captain's servant. These, with more of the remains, were tied in a hammock, and thrown overboard, with ballast and shot sufficient to sink it.

In all probability this unhappy business originated in some quarrel, which was decided on the spot ; or incautiousness might tempt the natives to seize the opportunity of satisfying their inhuman appetites.

They were detained in the Sound, by contrary winds, four days after this melancholy affair happened, during which time they saw none of the inhabitants.

On the 23d, they weighed and made sail out of the Sound, and stood to the eastward, but were baffled for two or three days with light winds, before they could clear the coast.

January the 10th 1774, they arrived abreast of Cape Horn. They were very little more than a month from Cape Palliser, in New Zealand, to Cape Horn, which is 121 deg. of longitude.

On opening some casks of peas and flour that had been stowed on the coals, they found them very much damaged, and not eatable; so thought it most prudent to make for the Cape of Good Hope.

On the 17th of February, they made the land of the Cape of Good Hope, and on the 19th anchored in Table Bay, where they found Commodore Sir Edward Hughes, with his majesty's ships Salisbury and Seahorse.

On the 16th of April, Captain Furneaux sailed for England, and on the 14th of July anchored at Spithead.

We now return to Captain Cook. The day after his arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, he waited on the governor, Baron Plettenberg, and other principal officers, who received and treated him with the greatest politeness.

They had only three men on board, whom it was thought necessary to send on shore for the recovery of their health; and for these the captain procured quarters, at the rate of thirty stivers, or half a crown per day, for which they were provided with victuals, drink, and lodging.

On examining the rudder, it was found necessary to unhang it, and take it on shore to repair. They were also delayed for want of caulkers. At length they obtained two workmen from one of the Dutch ships; and the Dutton English East Indiaman coming in from Bengal, Captain Rice obliged Captain Cook with two more, so that by the 26th of April this work was finished; and having got on board all necessary stores, and a fresh supply of provisions and water, they took leave of the governor and other principal officers, and the next morning repaired on board.

As

As soon as they were under fail, they saluted the garrison with thirteen guns; which compliment was immediately returned with the same number. A Spanish frigate and Danish Indiaman both saluted them as they passed, and Captain Cook returned each salute with an equal number of guns.

At day break, in the morning of the 15th of May, they saw the island of St. Helena, at the distance of fourteen leagues; and at midnight, anchored in the road before the town.

Governor Skettowe, and the principal gentlemen of the island, received and treated the captain, during his stay, with the greatest politeness, by shewing him every kind of civility in their power.

Whoever views St. Helena, in its present state, and can but conceive what it must have been originally, will not hastily charge the inhabitants with want of industry*; though, perhaps, they might apply it to more advantage, were more land appropriated to planting of corn, vegetables, and roots, instead of being laid out in pasture, which is the present mode.

During their stay here, they finished some necessary repairs of the ship, which they had not time to do at the Cape. They also filled all their empty water-casks; and the crew were served with fresh beef, purchased at five pence per pound. Their beef is exceedingly good, and is the only refreshment they had worth mentioning.

* Some censures having been passed, in the former voyage, on the inhabitants of St. Helena, for cruelty to their slaves, Captain Cook, with the liberality of a mind intent only on truth, confesses, from better information, that they were undeserved.

On the 21st of May, the captain took leave of the governor, and repaired on board. Upon leaving the shore, he was saluted with thirteen guns, which he returned.

In the morning of the 28th, they made the island of Ascension; and the same evening anchored in Cross Bay. They remained here till the evening of the 31st, and notwithstanding they had several parties out every night, they got but twenty-four turtles, it being rather too late in the season; however, as they weighed between four and five hundred pounds each, they were pretty well off.

The island of Ascension is about ten miles in length, in the direction of N.W. and S.E. and about five or six in breadth. It shews a surface composed of barren hills and valleys, on the most of which not a shrub or plant is to be seen for several miles, but stones and ashes in plenty, an indubitable sign that the isle, at some remote time, has been destroyed by a volcano, which has thrown up vast heaps of stones, and even hills. A high mountain, at the S.E. end of the isle, seems to be left in its original state, and to have escaped the general destruction. Its soil is a kind of white marl, which yet retains its vegetative qualities, and produces a kind of purslain, spurge, and one or two grasses. On these the goats subsist, and it is at this part of the isle only, where they are to be found.

While they lay in the road, a sloop belonging to Bermuda, had sailed but a few days before with one hundred and five turtle on board, which was as many as she could take in; but having turned several more on the different sandy beaches, they had ripped open their bellies, taken out the
eggs,

eggs, and left the carcases to putrefy; an act as inhuman as injurious to those who came after them.

Turtle, it is said, are to be found at this isle from January to June. The method of catching them is to have people upon the several sandy bays, to watch their coming on shore to lay their eggs, which is always in the night, and then to turn them on their backs, till there be an opportunity to take them off the next day. Nothing is more certain, than that all the turtle which are found about this island, come here for the sole purpose of laying their eggs; for they met with none but females; and of all those which they caught, not one had any food worth mentioning in its stomach; a sure sign, that they must have been a long time without any; and this may be the reason why the flesh of them is not so good as those caught on the coast of New South Wales, where they feed.

On the 31st of May they left Ascension, and steered to the northward. They had a great desire to visit the island of St. Matthew, to settle its situation; but as they found the wind would not let them fetch it, they steered for the island of Fernando de Noronha, on the coast of Brasil, in order to determine its longitude.

On the 9th of June, at noon, they made that place, distance six or seven leagues. It appeared in detached and peaked hills, the largest of which looked like a church tower or steeple. When they arrived in the road, a gun being fired from one of the forts, the Portuguese colours were displayed, and the example was followed by all the other forts. Having speedily ascertained the longitude, they stood away without landing.

By the 18th, they made no doubt that they had now got the N.E. trade-wind, as it was attended with fair weather, except now and then some light showers of rain; and as they advanced to the north the wind increased, and blew a fresh top-gallant gale.

On the 21st, the captain ordered the still to be fitted to the largest copper, which held about sixty-four gallons. The fire was lighted at four o'clock in the morning, and at six the still began to run. It was continued till six in the evening; in which time they obtained thirty-two gallons of fresh water, at the expence of one bushel and a half of coals, which was about three-fourths of a bushel more than was necessary to have boiled the ship's company's victuals only; but the expence of fuel was no object with them. Upon the whole, this is an useful invention; but the captain says, he would advise no man to trust wholly to it. For although you may, provided you have plenty of fuel and good coppers, obtain as much water as will support life, you cannot, with all your efforts, obtain sufficient to support health, in hot climates especially, where it is the most wanting.

Nothing worth mentioning happened till the 13th of July, when they made the island of Fayal, one of the Azores, and soon after that of Pico. At day break the next morning they bore away for the Bay of Fayal, or De Horta, where, at eight o'clock, they anchored.

The sole design in stopping here, was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity to find the rate of the watch, the better to enable them to fix, with some degree of certainty, the longitude of these islands. The moment they anchored, the captain sent an
1 officer

officer to wait on the English consul, and to notify his arrival, requesting permission for Mr. Wales to make observations on shore. Mr. Dent, who acted as consul, not only procured this permission of the governor, but accommodated Mr. Wales with a convenient place in his garden to set up his instruments; and, indeed, entertained all the gentlemen on board in the most liberal and hospitable manner.

During their stay, the ship's company was served with fresh beef; and they took on board about fifteen tuns of water, which they brought off in the country boats, at the rate of about three shillings per tun.

The principal produce of Fayal is wheat and Indian corn, with which they supply Pico and some of the other isles. The chief town is called Villa de Horta. It is situated in the bottom of the bay, close to the edge of the sea, and is defended by two castles, one at each end of the town, and a wall of stone-work, extending along the sea-shore from the one to the other. There is not a glass window in the place, except what are in the churches, and in a country-house which lately belonged to the English consul; all the others being latticed, which, to an Englishman, makes them look like prisons.

This little city, like all others belonging to the Portuguese, is crowded with religious buildings.

Fayal, although the most noted for wines, does not raise sufficient for its own consumption. This article is raised on Pico, where there is no road for shipping; but being brought to De Horta, and from thence shipped abroad, chiefly to America, it has acquired the name of Fayal wine.

Having left the bay, in the morning of the 19th, they steered for the island of Tercera, in order to ascertain its length; but the weather coming on very thick and hazy, and night approaching, they gave up the design, and proceeded with all expedition for England.

On the 29th of July, they made the land near Plymouth. The next morning they anchored at Spithead; and the same day, Captain Cook landed at Portsmouth, and set out for London, in company with Messrs. Wales, Forsters, and Hodges.

Having been absent from England three years and eighteen days, in which time, and under all changes of climate, he lost but four men, and only one of them by sickness, it may not be amiss, at the conclusion of this journal, to enumerate the several causes, to which, under the care of Providence, the captain says, he conceives this uncommon good state of health, experienced by his people, was owing.

They were furnished with a quantity of malt, of which was made Sweet-wort. To such of the men, as shewed the least symptoms of the scurvy; this was given, from one to two or three pints a day, each man; or in such proportion as the surgeon found necessary. This is, without doubt, one of the best antiscorbutic sea medicines yet discovered, if used in time.

Sour KROUT, of which they had a large quantity, is a wholesome vegetable food, highly antiscorbutic; and it spoils not by keeping. A pound of this was served to each man, when at sea, twice a week, or oftener, as was thought necessary.

Portable Broth was another great article, of which they had a large supply. An ounce of this to each man, or such other proportion as circumstances pointed out, was boiled in their peas, three days a week; and when they were in places where vegetables were to be got, it was boiled with them, and wheat or oatmeal, every morning for breakfast; and also with peas and vegetables for dinner.

Rob of Lemon and Orange, also, the surgeon made use of in many cases with great success.

But the introduction of the most salutary articles, either as provisions or medicines, will generally prove unsuccessful, unless supported by certain regulations. On this principle, many years experience, together with some hints the captain had from other intelligent officers, enabled him to lay a plan whereby all were to be governed.

The crew were at three watches, except upon some extraordinary occasions. By this means they were not so much exposed to the weather, as if they had been at watch and watch; and had generally dry clothes to shift themselves, when they happened to get wet.

Proper methods were used to keep their persons, hammocks, bedding, and clothes constantly clean and dry. Equal care was taken to keep the ship clean and dry, betwixt decks. Once or twice a week she was aired with fires; and when this could not be done, she was smoked with gunpowder, mixed with vinegar or water. They had also, frequently, a fire made in an iron pot, at the bottom of the well, which was of great use in purifying the air in the lower parts of the ship. To this, and to cleanliness, as well in the
ship

ship as amongst the people, too great attention cannot be paid ; the least neglect occasions a putrid and disagreeable smell below, which nothing but fires will remove.

Captain Cook concludes his account of this his second voyage round the world as follows :

“ It doth not become me to say how far the principal objects of our voyage have been obtained. Had we found out a continent there, we might have been better enabled to gratify curiosity ; but we hope our not having found it, after all our persevering researches, will leave less room for future speculation about unknown worlds remaining to be explored.

“ But, whatever may be the public judgment about other matters, it is with real satisfaction, and without claiming any merit but of attention to my duty, that I can conclude this account with an observation, which facts enable me to make, that our having discovered the possibility of preserving health amongst a numerous ship's company, for such a length of time, in such varieties of climate, and amidst such continued hardships and fatigues, will make this voyage remarkable in the opinion of every benevolent person, when the disputes about a southern continent shall have ceased to engage the attention, and to divide the judgment of philosophers.”

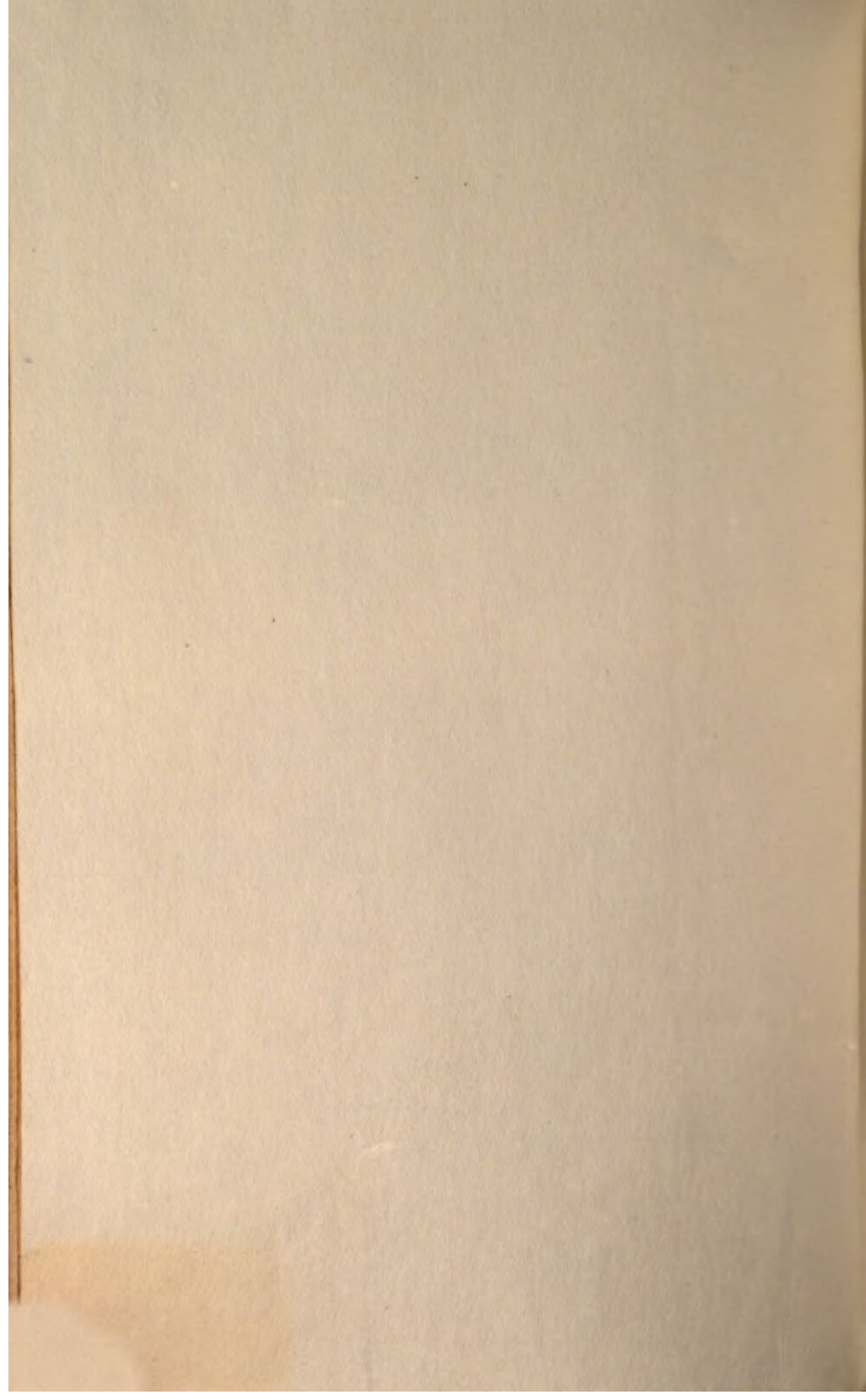
We shall only add, that during this voyage, Captain Cook resolved the great problem of a southern continent, having traversed that hemisphere in such a manner, as not to leave a possibility of its existence, within the reach of navigation. In his progress, however, he discovered New Caledonia, the largest island in the Southern
ern

ern Pacific, except New Zealand ; the island of Georgia, and an unknown coast, which he named Sandwich Land, the thule of the fouthern hemisphere ; and having twice visited the tropical seas, he settled the situations of the old, and made several new discoveries.

END OF VOL. VI.

CHAPTER IV
THE NEW SYSTEM OF
TEACHING
The new system of teaching
is based on the principle
of the child's natural
development. It is a
system of teaching
which is based on the
child's natural
development. It is a
system of teaching
which is based on the
child's natural
development.

END OF VOLUME



Mavor, William Fordyce, 1758-1837

Historical Account Of The Most Celebrated Voyages, Travels, And
Discoveries From The Time Of Columbus To The Present Period

Bd.: 6

London (1796)

It.coll. 52 m-6

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10465586-2